THE

FIRST BOOKE

OF PRIMALEON

of Greece.

Describing the knightly deeds of Armes, as also the memorable aduentures of Prince Edward of England.

And continuing the former Historie of *Palmendos*, brother to the fortunate Prince *Primaleon*.

LONDON,
Printed for Cuthbert Burby, and are to be solde at his shop by the Roiall Exchange.
1595.

THE

FIRST BOOKE

OF

PRIMALEON

OF

Greece.

Declaring the Kingly deeds of Arner, and alſo
the memorable aduentures of Prince
Palmyndo of England.

And containing the former Hiſtorie of Palmendos booke
to the Birthes of Prince Primaleon.

LONDON,

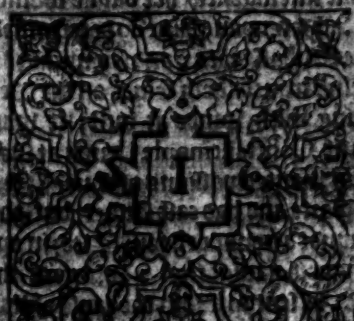
Printed for Cuthbert Burby, and are to
be ſolde at his ſhop by the Royall
Exchange.

1595.

The first Booke of Primaleon of Greece: Describing his Knightly deedes of Armes, as also the memorable aduentures of Prince Edward of England. And containing the former History of Palmen, der, Brother to the fortunate Prince Primaleon, &c.

CHAP. I.

How the Ambassadours of Fraunce came to *Constantinople*, where they were Honourably receaued by the Emperour, who hauing heard the effect of their Ambassage, and conferred theron with the Prince *Arnedes*: affianced him immediatlie to his Daughter *Philocrisia*, by whose hand the Ambassadours presented the Letters of credence from the King their Master.



Mistresse Francelina, and thereby conceiued a generall reioy-sing. The messenger being carefull to dispatch this businesse, made such haste in his iourney, as in short time he arriued at the famous Cittie of Paris, where the King vnderstanding the will of his Sonne, quickly resolued to conclude these al-liances: Electing as chiefe in this Ambassage, the Duke of Orleaunce, a verie wise & prudent Lord, commanding also that the Marquesse of Oliuet, & the Countie Peter (one of the best Knightes in his Court) should beare him companie, with ma-nie other Barrons so sumptuously accoustred, as euidently de-clared, how far the French exceeded all other Nations in mag-nificence and good partes; whereof at this time wee haue no leysure to speake. The King hauing giuen them his Letters of credence, and instructions concerning the summe of their charge: he deliuered them sundry precious gifts, which he sent to Philochrista and the Prince Arnedes. But before their departure, there came a Knight to the Court from the King of Castile, to aduertise Recinde, howe his Brother being decea-sed without issue, all the people were much reioyced, that the Scepter of the Kinghome should fall to a Prince so valiant.

When the King of Fraunce heard these newes by the gen-tleman of Spaine named Pinedo, he made answere, how Re-cinde was gone with his Son Arnedes, to Constantinople, where (as hee heard by credible intelligence) hee daylie wonne great honour and renowme. Hereupon, Pinedo determined to passe into Greece with the Ambassadors, and comming to Tollon in Prouence, they embarqued them selues on the Me-diterranean Sea, where sayling with winde at will, it was not long before they arriued at Constantinople, euen at such time as Arnedes was in his wonted passions of loue. No sooner were they entred the Porte and had cast Anker, but the Duke of Orleaunce commaunded a generall ioyfulnesse, in ap-plauding heauen for their happie nauigation: whereof the Emperour being aduertised, he sent to know the cause of this reioysing. When he heard the arriuall of the French Ambas-sadors, he was right glad thereof, hoping Arnedes would now

now recouer health by some good tidinges: and therefore sent speedily to acquaint him therewith, intreating him to bee of good courage, seeing the Lordes of his Countrie were come so happilie. It were needlesse to demaund if Arnedes were not pleased with these tydinges, considering the present cure he found in one moment hereby, which shewed, that herein consisted the onelie medicine for his malladie: this made him leaue his bed, and goe vnto Primaleon for the Emperour, who seeing him come so cheerefullie, was not a little glad of his good recouerie, and said: Me thinks sir Arnedes that the arriuall of these French Gentlemen, hath reuiued and verie well strengthened you. Well haue you saide my Lorde (answered Arnedes) because it is the onlie meanes of my restoring. Philocrista (who knew full well the depth of his amorous desires) reioyced marueilouslie at this fortunate occurrence, so that by outward view of her countenance, might easilie bee discerned the inward content of her hart, and whence proceeded this alteration: wherein (by silence) shee betrayed to the French Prince, what knight she durst not vtter in speech, and whereof he minded no interpreter, but with like signes returned thankfull requitall, intending to goe presentlie to the Porte, to see by whome the King his Father had sent this long expected message. The Emperour commaunded manie of his Barrons with him, for more honourable accompanying the Ambassadors to the Pallace, and in signe of greater fauour, Primaleon himselfe went with Arnedes, who sent his vsuarle before, to let them vnderstand his comming to the Porte: Whereupon, the Duke of Orleaunce with his company immediatly issued, where first beholding their yong Prince, they ran bare-headed to kisse his hand, which he hauing seuerallie embraced, thus spake to the Duke of Orleaunce: My noble Cosen, how many pleasures hath your arriuall here furnished me withall, in soth farre more than you can easilie thinke on: But tell mee (I pray you) ere we passe any further, how fares the King my Noble Lorde and Father? So well as your heart can desire my Lord, answered the Duke, and as one wounderfull long-

Mistresse Francelina, and thereby conceiued generall reioy-sing. The messenger being carefull to dispatch this businesse, made such haste in his iourney, as in short time he arriued at the famous Citie of Paris, where the King vnderstanding the will of his Sonne, quickly resolued to conclude these af-faires: Electing as chiefe in this Ambassage, the Duke of Orleaunce, a verie wise & prudent Lord, commanding also that the Marquesse of Oliuet, & the Countie Peter (one of the best Knightes in his Court) should beare him companie, with ma-nie other Barrons so sumptuouslie accoutred, as rudenlie de-clared, how far the French exceeded all other Nations in mag-nificence and good partes; whereof at this time wee haue no leysure to speake. The King hauing giuen them his Letters of credence, and instructions concerning the summe of their charge: he deliuered them sundry precious gifts, which he sent to Philochrista and the Prince Arnedes. But before their departure, there came a Knight to the Court from the King of Castile, to aduertise Recinde, howe his Brother being dece-sed without issue, all the people verie much reioyced, that the Scepter of the Kingdome should fall to a Prince so valiant.

When the King of Fraunce heard these newes by the gen-tleman of Spaine named Pinedo, he made answere, how Re-cinde was gone with his Son Arnedes to Constantinople, where (as hee heard by credible intelligence) hee daylie wonne great honour and renowme. Hereupon, Pinedo determined to passe into Greece with the Ambassadors, and comming to Tollon in Prouence, they embarqued them selues on the Me-diteranean Sea; where sayling with winde at will, it was not long before they arriued at Constantinople, euen at such time as Arnedes was in his wonted passions of loue. No sooner were they entred the Porte and had cast Anker, but the Duke of Orleaunce commaunded a generall ioyfsance, in ap-plauding heauen for their happie nauigation: whereof the Emperour being aduertised, he sent to know the cause of this reioysing. When he heard the arriuall of the French Ambas-sadors, he was right glad thereof, hoping Arnedes would

now

now recouer health by some good tidinges: and therefore sent speedily to acquaint him therewith, intreating him to bee of good courage, seeing the Lordes of his Countrie were come so happilie. It were needlesse to demaund if Arnedes were well pleased with these tydinges, considering the present cure bee found in one moment hereby, which shewed, that herein consisted the onelie medicine for his malladie: this made him leaue his bed, and goe vnto Primaleon to the Emperour, who seeing him come so cheerefullie, was not a little glad of his good recouerie, and said: Me thinks Sir Arnedes that the ar-
rigall [illegible] French Gentleman hath reuiued and heale well
swered
Phi-
s dese-
so that
discer-
o this
rench
hereof
hanke-
ss by
o mes-
arrons
mbassa-
dors to the Pallace, and in signe of greater fauour, Primaleon himselfe went with Arnedes, who sent his dwarfe before, to let them vnderstand his comming to the Porte: Whereupon, the Duke of Orleaunce with his company immediatly issued, where first beholding their yong Prince, they ran bare-headed to kisse his hand, which he hauing seuerallie embraced the, thus spake to the Duke of Orleaunce: My noble Cosen, how many pleasures haue your Arriuall here inriched me withall, in soth farre more than you can easlie thinke on: But tell mee (I pray yee) ere we passe any further, how fares the King my noble Lorde and Father? So well as your heart can desire my Lord, answered the Duke, and as one wounderfull long-

ing spéedilie to sée you: wherefore his will is, that making so little stay héere as possible you can, you tile some haft in returning to your Countrie of Fraunce. Herein shall I most gladlie obey him, replyed Arnedes, ere many dayes after this be expired: in meane space, giue honour to Primaleon here the Emperours Sonne, who hath vouchsafed to come in person to welcome yée.

Primaleon marueiled that these French Lords and Knights so humbled themselues to Arnedes, which made him imagine that he was Sonne to their king: in regard whereof, béing the greater kindnes to the Duke of Orleaunce and the other Ambassadours, he desired the to resolue him concerning the estate of Arnedes, who hitherto had not disclosed him selfe to anie one. My Lord (said the Duke) this yong Prince is our Soueraignes Sonne, who in respect of his earnest desire to do seruice to the Emperour your Father: thought it meetest for him to come vnknowne to this Court, and héere to remayne so concealed, till hee should perceiue his priuate deseignes fall out to his owne contentment. Concerning which, the present message committed to our trust by the king his Father, I hope will sort to good and successefull end; with the help of him whome I pray so spéed vs, as herein our enterprise may not be disappointed. In good faith said Primaleon (turning himselfe to the French Prince) I haue very great reason to complaine of you Arnedes, that you should thus long hide your self from me, for although you resolued in comming hither, that no one should know yet yet you might haue excepted me from that vniuersall number, considering the habitude and secrets you might boldlie haue reposed in mee, that I should not haue continued so long ignorant of your royal race. My Lord (answered Arnedes embracing him) here in I beseech you hold mee excused, in respect that straying so far from the French Court, I determined to do somewhat in actions of Armes, that might be worthie report of my progenie, before my selfe were knowne to anie one: And béeing concealed, I might best doe it, considering no way els could I reach the top of my desire: but now

nie thing wherein I employed my selfe, might rather redound to my disgrace than commendation. Certainely (replied Primaleon) if by deeds of Armes you desire to publish your name, me thinkes you should take the day of Tourney, considering your Royall geniture, and thereby expresse your knightly valour and resolution. Ah my Lord (laide Arnedes, interrupting him) it pleaseth you to account mee among men of desert, though far beyond the aim I to bee seene in ante such assembly. Notwithstanding, if good will may incite forward a generous minde, by puissance to witnesse some part of his strength: I hope I should not be reputed amongst the weakest. No truelie (answered Primaleon) but rather amongst the strongest, where honourable victorie will set on your head a triumphall Crowne.

But leave wee these speeches till some better conuenient time, and goe wee to the Emperour, who will be most ioyfull hearing these newes. So mounting on horse backe with the Ambassadors, they rode to the Pallace, where gratious entertainement was commanded them by the Emperour. And in this time Pinedo made knowen to the Prince Arnedes, how he past into Fraunce to finde Recinde, whome now hee came to acquaint with the death of his Brother, and how all the Barrons and people of Castile, would willingly accept him for their Lord and King.

Of these tidinges was the Frenchman not a little glad, that his Cosin Recinde (whome hee loued as himselfe) was heire to the Scepter of Castile: But yet was hee as sore on the other side, because he could heare no report of him, wherefore perswading Pinedo, that hee hoped of his short returne, in that the Tourney at his marriage would be a meane thereof, which was published through all the parts of the Empire, he thought it needlesse ante further to pursue his search.

Now the Emperour (who in this space had understood the assent of the Prince Anedes) when hee saw him enter the Hall with his Sonne Primaleon, arose from his seat to embrace him, saying: How happens it my Lord Arnedes, that you

you would all this while so cunningly dissemble with vs, in shadowing of whence and what you were: wherein you haue done vs great discourtesie, and left such honour as your vertues deserued. Well me I pray you, wherefore did you so conceale your selfe, knowing how happie I would haue thought my selfe, to haue vnderstood of you without this tarrying.

My Gratious Lord replyed Arnedes, most humbly I intreate you, vse no such wordes on my behalfe, because I know my selfe vnworthie of them, much lesse of the honour I haue receiued in your Countrie, which a better man than I can no way deserue. But neuer could any quiet enter my thoughts, till I beheld the magnificence of your Court, and that to my poore power I might do you seruice: poore and tender in truth is it in respect of my good will, which is equall with the most affectionate seruant you haue, among whom I desire your Grace to repute mee, as the man whome no one shall out-goe in zeale and deuotion of minde. And a great discountenance of heauen haue I accounted it, that no occasion hitherto would happen, whereby I might liuelie expresse the true affection imprinted in my heart.

It sufficeth (answered the Emperour) what already you haue done, proue enough to giue you the reputation of one of the best Knightes in the world. And as for me, if I be not deprined of the fauour (considering the loue I beare you) I shal euermore continue my former opinion, and repute my selfe happie in making alliance with you, when you shall thinke expedient to yeld thereto.

Arnedes, who saw the passage open, whereby his soule might soonest be conducted to rest, and by him likewise that had the onely key thereof: was maruellously ouercome with ioy, when taking the Emperour by the hand, to kisse it in signe of thankes, he said. Well may I now vaunt my selfe to haue attained the height of humane felicitie, being offered by your Grace an alliance so honourable, for which I know not how to shew my selfe thankfull (in discharge of the debte wherein I stand bound) but onely by continuing your humble seruice,

and

and day by day to confirme the indissoluble bond, wherein I am euerlastingly wrapped by this extraordinarie fauour. Notwithstanding, if my vnfayned affection, to remaine your obedient seruant, or dutifull Sonne if you please, may stand for an earnest pennie: then intreat I you to accept thereof as I present it, to the end I may hereafter be so readie in performaunce, as now I am in heart. For euen as the greatest clap of thunder followes the fairest day, euen nothing else in suddennes may be compared thereto: as readie shall I be vpon receit of the herie conjectures of your desires, to satisfie the same, than if I should giue attendance vppon commandement.

The Emperour hering marueilous glad to heare him vse such honest speeches, gathered very well with what shaft hee was wounded, & that the matter now opened by conference, was but only to seeke a speedie balme or medecine for the hurt receiued. Whereby he take occasion to let him sit by him, whiche vsed amorouse glaunces still to the same purpose: but among the rest, when the Emperour heard the whole storie of Recinde his Coson, he could not chuse but greatly wonder thereat. Hereof was Melicia ioyfull beyond measure, because she intirely loued the Spanish Prince: yet could shee not compare with Philocrista in contentment of spirit, by reason shee wanted the amorous obiect which she had, nor could she participate in those vnspeakeable pleasures, wherewith the harts of the other Damsine were specially delighted.

On the morrow, the Emperour caused the Pallace to bee richlie adorned with tapistrie of gold and siluer, and his most sumptuous Iewels to be placed in open shew, that the French Ambassadors should behold his stately pompe: they likewise comming into the Hall, attired in their fairest and costliest habilliments, were receiued by the Emperour in the vpmost Banque, and to him (by faire Philocrista) they presented their Letters of credence, the effect whereof hereafter followeth.

The Letter sent from the King of *Fraunce*, to the Emperour *Palmerin*.

To the most high and magnanimous Prince, *Palmerin*, *de Oliua* Emperour of *Constantinople*, true mirrour of Chiualry: *Lewes*, by the grace of God, King of *Fraunce*, wisheth health condigne to his excellent mightines.

THe assurance giuen me of the renowme of your generositie (my most deare Brother) which is spred to the very furthest, most barbarous, and hidden regions of this hemisphere: caused mee immediatly dispatch my Ambassadours toward your Palestie, to intreate that you would consent to an alliance, which I haue purposed (if you please) betweene our houses, according to the ordenaunce of the last will, touched the late King of famous memorie my most Noble Father (whom God absolue) left me when he payd his mortall tribute to nature. And because I haue instructed the bearers hereof, in all the pointes and articles which on our behalfe you are to bee acquainted withall: I shall need to vse the selfe discourse by Letter, reposing onely on their sufficiencie. Requesting you that in this cause you will giue them credit, as what else they shall thinke meete and determine, concerning the marriage of Arnedes Prince of Fraunce my Sonne, as if I were with you my selfe in person: and leshe what honor shall be done to them in your Countrie, I will account it as receiued by my selfe. But least happilie you should repute it strange, that the eldest Sonne of so great a house as this, should come to your Court so meanely attended: therein I desire ye consider his earnest affection

affection, to accomplish some memorable deede vnknowne, whereby you may easily gather, how gladly he would goe beyond, or equall the best.

Your affectionate and perfect friend.

The house of Fraunce.

This Letter being read, the Emperour tooke the Ambassadours into his Chamber, where after hee had heard at full the summe of their message: immediatlie hee called together the Princes and Lordes of his priuie Councell, to let them vnderstand his intent concerning these affayres.

This by their aduise was immediatly confirmed for good, as well to accomplishe his promise to the dereailed King of Fraunce, as also in respect Arnedes behaviour was so generally commended, being a vertuous Knight, and verie forward to Martiall exercise. But aboue all the rest, Primaleon was most willing and readie in consenting to this alliance, knowing the earnest desire of his Sister, to see her selfe the wife of Arnedes another Adonis: and for beautie, well might Philocrista bee resembled to Psyches, or rather (if you will) a second Venus.

The marriage being concluded, on the morrow following they were affianced together, with very stately and magnificent triumphes, so that both in the Pallace and thorough the Cittie, was nothing but disportes and pleasures to the no little content of the Emperour and Empresse, as well for the cunning and knowledge of Palmendos, as for this loue knot betweene Philocrista and the Royall Prince of Fraunce. And note howe Primaleon armes himselfe for Knighthood, that hereafter hee may bestowe his time in those commendable occasions.

Here the French Author confesseth his fault, for hauing intituled the whole booke the first Booke of Primaleon, (with that title goes before, (called by me the Prologue of Palmendos) the name ingendring both the difficultie, and this, where-

Primaleons chiualrie doth now but begin. His reason is, that the young Prince being verie diuinelie brought vp, and not of yeeres to receiue the order of Knighthood, hath take occasion (in meane while) to report the braue behauiour of his brother Palmendos. But now shall wee speake of the gentle Prince himselfe, the onely mirrour of honour and Armes, as by reading his History you may perceiue.

CHAP. II.

How *Primaleon* intreated the Emperour *Palmerin* his Father, in the presence of the French Ambassadoures (who prepared themselues to the Grecian portes) that hee would giue him the order of Knighthood. And how the Lorde of the enclosed Isle sent him a Sheeld and a Sworde, wherewith hee tooke his order. And what hee sent to the Emperour, which he afterward sent to the King *Florendos* his Father, requesting his presence at the mariage of faire *Philesticia*.

TO begin the narration and discourse of the deeds of our Primaleon, who in his youngest yeares exercised himselfe so well in vertuous Disciplines (whereof according to his verie naturall inclination and desire, he declared himselfe a studious louer,) as one might iustly name him the true miracle of perfection. So among other endowments, for the spirite of wisedome he might be compared to Salomon, for beautie both exteriour and interiour, to the gentle Greeke Alcibiades, and for magnanimitie, counsell, militarie strategemes and such like, to valiant Scipio the African, or the subtill Hanniball of Carthage, especiallie in this time of his youth, when he had not receiued his order of Knighthood.

But now fit time therfore being come, he fell on his knees before his Father, armed with a light Cuiret, which had no other beautie or bauerie then the plaine fashion, which must be affected for his help in fight, and with humble gestures hee intreated

intreated one requeſt: The Emperour very willingly made him graunt thereof, as the like, hee did to diuers others, who this day demaunded his gratious fauour, ſeeing him ſo bountifull in honour of this feaſt.

My Lord (ſaide Primaleon) the requeſt which at this inſtant I deſire your Grace not to denie mée, is, that I may be armed Knight by your hande in this armour, on the day of the feaſte for the nuptialls of Philocriſta my ſiſter, for to make the ſame the more magnificent. I hope to prouide a Tourney worthy the view of your Maieſtie, wherto I beſeech you graunt me licence of ſafe conduct for all Knights whatſoeuer, becauſe I intend to haue it publiſhed in diuers Countries.

This had I graunted (quoth the Emperour) with all my hart, albeit thou hadſt not bound mee thereto by promiſe, becauſe theſe are the thinges that highly pleaſe me, and very honorable is it to ſée ſuch ſolemnities at mariages, eſpecially of ſuch a Princeſſe as thy ſiſter is. My Lord (ſayd Abenunco to Primaleon) I humbly beſeech you to preferre me in this action, in that I likewiſe earneſtly deſire to receiue my order of knighthood with you, ſo pleaſe the Emperour to honor mee with ſo much fauour. The like requeſt made Armaſin ſonne to Duke Prolome, who was equall with them in youthfulnes of yeares, wherwith Primaleon was not a little content.

Incontinently were Heralds of armes diſpatched into diuers Regions, to publiſhe the Tourney, and the day purpoſed for the beginning of the ſportes, which ſhould continue during the feaſt, with Court royall openly kept, at the mariage of the Princeſſe Philocriſta: aſſuring all knights that pleaſed to ſhew themſelues there, to bee entertained with honour euerie way equall to deſert. Meane while was Arnedes ſeated by his affianced Miſtreſſe, (more faire and braue adorned, than the daughter of Tindarus, when Paris Alexander was ouercome with her loue) they both be ioying, yet with modeſtie and bafhfulnes, as neither durſt enterpriſe the hardines to ſpeake

the first woꝛde: in which mute passions, they rather resembled the two beautifull starres Castor and Pollux, than humaine creatures possessed of life and moouing, whereuppon Melicia smiling, thus spake to them,

Ah that mine eyes were so happie, that they coulde now behold him, foꝛ whom my heart indures most passionate martirdome, I would not show such pusillanimitie as you doe, seeming as though you scantly knewe each other: why then doo you not giue some recreation to your affectionate soules, but stand thus as dead bodies depꝛiued of life? Madame, (answered the Pꝛince) mervaile not to see me silent and dispossessed of speech, in that lone by nature sealed vp my lippes, foꝛ seeing vs in greater content with the thing moꝛe conformable to our desires, hee toke the benefit of speaking from vs, least the one should not please our eares so well as the other doth our harts. Moꝛeouer, I haue till this houre so extreamely desired that, which now I am persuaded is altogether mine, as I shall neuer enioy any quiet in minde, (so yrksome is the thought of time to me) till I may see the Crowne of Fraunce on the head of faire Philocrista. As foꝛ you Madam, be you certaine, if my Cosin Recinde as yet liueth, one day to rule the Realme of Castile: foꝛ so perfectly doth he lone you, as his returne hether will not be long to conclude this affaire, which foꝛ my part, I would be glad to hasten, in regarde of the desire I haue to please you both to my power.

At these woꝛds Melicia began somwhat modestly to blush, neuertheleſſe being pꝛudent and well aduised, shee cunningly dissembled this youthfull feminine shame, saying. My Lord, the Pꝛince Recinde is of such a vertuous and gentle nature, and so well his valour and pꝛowesse knowen where he trauaileth, as each one ought to reioyce at his good foꝛtune: especially my selfe, beyond all other that lone and honoꝛ him, if it be so, that hee beares me such good will as you speake of.

These speeches of Melicia so imboldned Arnedes, that now he began somewhat to cheare vp him selfe, and entered into further conference with his Lady, taking of her the first ex-

ample

nesse of their loue, which were many daintie kisses, soft touchings and such like, yet so honest and comely discharged, as it was no scandall or offence to the beholders, but rather moued them to wish, that they would longer continue this agreeable and pleasing behauiour.

Now the Emperour amongst those that were of greatest regarde there present, highly esteemed and honored his sonne Palmendos, in that the cheefest ioy and pleasure of this feaste proceeded from him: herupon he remembred the sealed booke which he sent him, with so many other pretious thinges from the Ile of Delphos, as in the tenth Chapter of Palmendos hath beene declared.

To make knowen therfore to the french Lords the magnanimitie and vertues of his sonne Palmendos, hee commaunded the rich & exquisite chaire (wherin the Idol sat) to be brought before him, and the booke likewise, which hee had caused to be kept in his treasurie, amongst matters of greatest account.

To open the booke hee made proue againe by many of his knights, but there was none could come nere it, which hee perceiuing, deliuered it to Palmendos saying. My sonne, make some little proue of this booke, for if you bring not this labour to end, I am assured we may set our hearts at quiet, for reading or beholding any thing therein contained. Palmendos turning aside his head, and making a lowly reuerence to the Emperour, toke the booke from forth the hands of a knight that endeuored to open it, and with such ease did he open it, as if the same had neuer been closed before: herat the Emperour was exceeding ioyfull, and turning towardes the Noblemen of Fraunce, he could not containe, but needes must expresse before them a most euident signe of fatherly affection to Palmendos. Then taking the booke, he turned ouer the leaues from one end to an other, finding no matter or discourse written therin only he beheld the figures of two Emperours painted in the midst therof, the one attyred after the greekish manner, holding a sheild vppon his arme, wherein was the blazon and discription of the armes of the Empyre: the other was armed

cap a pe after the Turkish guise, with a naked sword in his right hand, wherewith he seemed to menace the Gréeke, and with his left hand very furiously hée snatched the shield from his arme.

If the Emperour were highly pleased with Palmendos opening the booke, no doubte, but hee greatlye marueiled what sinister presage these figures deliuered by their shew & fashion, wherefore he said aloud, that these did signifie mighty matters: hereupon all the Lordes and knights approched nere him to see the figures, and passing the booke from hande to hand, they all could coniecture nothing but matter of astonishment. But as each one deliuered his opinion, according to such reason as best seemed vnto them: there entred the pallace a young Gentleman in verie rich habilliments, carrying a shield, and one of the verie best Swordes for Armes, that euer Vulcan God of the Forgers could deuise to make by his diuine Arte: and being come before the Emperour, he set his knee to the ground, speaking in this manner.

Sir, the knight of the enclosed Ile, sent me directly to this Court, to kisse your hand on his behalfe, being the man who he loueth, honoureth and estéemeth, more than any other person this day liuing vnder the celestiall Spheres: Albeit as yet hee neuer saw yee, neyther knowes yée, but onelye by the renowme of your manhood and generositie, which hath so farre commended yée, and gotten such conquest ouer him, as hee cannot by his Magicke Arts, Necromancie, Cabalist and hidden Philosophie, (wherein he may well bee named the second Zoroasbres,) foresée any thing, that may turne to your griefe or discontent of mind: but he imagineth himselfe bound to let yee know thereof. Wherefore, that yée may wade no further in the depth of doubtfull opinions, which the two figures in this enchaunted booke may cumber your thoughts withall: he tells yée by me, that as yée behold here these Images, euen so (one day) shall the Empire of Gréece, and the glorie of her good knightes, be abated and destroyed by the enemies of our faith. So that for the sinnes and iniquities of the Christi-

ans,

ans, God will suffer betweene the Grekes and Turkes mor-
tall diuorce & hatred, which shall end by a most bloodie discom-
fiture, whereto you and your Son Palmendos haue alreadie gi-
uen beginning. Neuertheless, this ruine and decadence shall
not happen in your time, neyther of him or your posteri-
tie, because all their liues (euen to the last day) shall bee most
glorious and triumphall, not any of your enemies erecting
one Trophe ouer them: therefore receiue no griefe at this fa-
tall iudgment, considering we can no way escape the inuit-
table destenie, whereto God hath appointed vs.

I see well then (replyed the Emperour in great beautnes)
that man shall not haue anie one intire pleasure in this mor-
tall life.

Ah soueraigne directer of all things, most deuoutly I in-
treat thee, that thou wilt for euer imprint within my soule,
the true caracters of thy holy catholike faith, to the end I may
both liue & die thereafter, without any other desire, than to ac-
complish thy most blessed will. And albeit that Greece (in
my time) shall not receiue this wound, yet must it needs mar-
uellously offend and displease me, that so good people (by a false
and miscreant Dog) should be so outraged.

Neuertheless, seing I can no other way redeeme it, I
sweare and protest before you all, hereafter to be a cruell and
capital enemie to these barbarous and vnbeleeuing Nations,
making them dearely to buy before hand, the infelicity desti-
nyed to this moane-worthie countrie. And euen so it came
to passe, in that both he, and Palmendos in his Kingdome of
Thessalie, did great and infinite dammages to the Turkes,
for euer after there was continually open warres betweene
those Nations.

But the Emperour then somewhat mittygating his
choller, with a more pleasing countenance and milder tearms,
thus spake to them about him.

Wherefore should I offend my selfe wyth such things as
we shall neuer beholde? I pray yee (for all this) let vs not leaue
the fruition of such pleasures, as God hath lent vs at this in-

stant

stant: for seeing it is hys will, that happy successe shall betyde the assayres of my time, and they that follow of my posterity likewise: I haue no reason to passionate my selfe, but rather to repute me the most happy Prince, that thys day inhabiteth betweene the two Poles.

Therfore I pray you (quoth he to the Messenger) on my behalfe, thank the Lord of the enclosed Ile your Master, for putting me out of those doubtfull imaginations, striuing to vnderstand what these two figures shoulde signifie: assuring him withall, that he hath no friend in this world, who can make more account of his goodwill than I do, nor shall he finde any lot lesse in me towards him, when pleaseth him to make any triall therof: so breaking off, the Gentleman went a little lower toward Primaleon, who likewise was there present, & thus spake to him: Happy & fortunate Prince, the Lord of the enclosed Ile my master, who loues you as himself, hath sent you this good sworde and rich shield, the two best and most exquisite weapons, that at this day are to be found in all the world, and them he thinks meete for so valiaunt a knight as you will proue, aduertising you, that the clouen rock, being thus seperated, as you may beholde here figured in this shield: signifieth the partialitie and little loue betweene your aunt her, who in after time shall make one sole heart of twaine: so that on the day of this reciprocation hapning betweene you, this impregnable rock shall then remaine intyre & closed againe, and without any impeach, to testifie your reconciliation.

Tell your Master from me (answered Primaleon, as one abashed to heare such speaches,) that as it hath pleased him to send me this fayre present, which I shal wel & carefully keepe for his sake: so wold I haue him commãd me any thing wherein I may do him pleasure, when he shall aduertise me, as the mã that may command my vttermost, & whom I highly thank for his curtesie, albeit I cannot but remaine in perplexitie, till I vnderstand more clearly the matters you haue told me.

The time will come (replyed the young Gentleman,) when you shall knowe them sufficiently, although at this instant they

they lárne so hard and obscure to yée: and then shall ye recompence the seruice, which now yée receiue from my Walker.

Then commaunded Primaleon, that one should fetch a rich present for the Lord of the enclosed Ile, in requitall of the excellent Armes he sent him, and another in like manner for the Gentleman that brought them: which immediatly was persourmed in euery respect, when the youth (with great reuerence taking his leaue) returned presently towarde the Ile, leauing all the Court meruayling at the newes before rehearsed.

The Emperour and his Barrons long looked on the weapons, each one commending the artificiall workemanship of them, & meruayling what the strange seperation of the rocke should meane, being thus foretold, that one day it should ioyn together againe, which made the Emperour deliuer these wordes before all there present. I am perswaded wee shall behold great matters of importance, when this halfe deuided Rock shall knit together againe: So that as lárnes to nice my Sonne (speaking to Primaleon) for thée are reserued many aduentures, which none but thou canst effectually finishe: Wherein I pray God to bee thy director, enduing thée with such strength and hardines, as thou mayest honorably make an end of them.

So doe I deuoutlie pray my selfe (answered Primaleon) els shall I repute all my life verie carelesse bestowed, and I vnworthie to come in companie of so great personages, if I should not resemble (in some good part or other) the noble Lord that begot me: and that I may attaine thereto, it is necessarie I should passe through many perillous aduayles, knowing that without erceding endeuour, it is impossible to reach such honour, as doth for euer make men to be esteemed. For this may serue me as a most worthie example, yea and an infallible mirrour of all vertues, proceeding from your excellencie so great a president, as not onely hath sweetly conquered the loue of your subiects, but gayning like wise a priuiledge of euerie ones good will, hath before conflagned the enemie and

moſt barbarous Nations, to admire and honour yée for al perfections, being the cheefeſt peece of workemanſhippe that euer Nature made.

Theſe gentle and gratious ſpéeches of the Prince Primaleon, made the Emperour his Father ſo pleaſed as poſſiblie might be, hearing from him ſuch honeſt commendations, yet collourably aymyng at a third perſon, as thence forth he reputed him verie magnanimous, and remembring Achilles, Alexander, Themiſtocles, and other ſuch valiant Champions, which Greece in former time had brought forth, he began to conceiue ſome hope, that one day he ſhould ſée him go beyond all other of his time. Whereupon hee gaue commandement, that the weapons ſent from the Lorde of the enclosed Iſle, ſhould be verie charilie layde vp, and for this cauſe, if afterwarde in any place Primaleon would not be knowen, he named himſelfe the Knight of the clouen rocke. From that time all the whole day, there paſſed no other ſpéeches among them, but of the meruaylous knowledge of this great Magitian, the Emperour entring into ſo good opinion of him, as he could neuer forget that the Empire of Greece ſhould be ſackt by the Turkes, which was a continuall griefe to his heart: yet would hee not outwardly deliuer any ſhow thereof, but with Princely geſtures ſhadowing them ſtill, ſéemed as pleaſant as euer he was before.

Primaleon likewiſe on the other ſide was very penſiue, deſiring alſo to know her name, who already by the very words of the yong Gentleman, had inflamed his thoughts with the heauenlie fire of Venus: for till this houre hee had no knowledge of amourous paſſions, but now his heart was ſo lively touched therewith, as there they had taken a perpetual dwelling place, as yee ſhall perceiue by the following diſcourſe of the hiſtorie.

But now he fell to make proviſion with the other knights, giuing order that all thinges might bee readie againſt the triumph day, which was appointed for the Nuptialles of his Siſter. And for the more magnificent gracing thereof, the

Emperour

Emperour greatly desired, to see the King his Father and the Quéene his Mother there present, which made him send a post in this behalfe to request them. The like did hee to the King of Sparta and Arismena his Aunt, whome hee had not séene since their espousalls: hee sent for King Frisoll also, with the residue of his chiefest friendes, that they would honour him with their presence at his Daughters wedding, because some after she was to depart for Fraunce.

The Horseman which the Emperour sent for Macedon, found King Florendos in exceeding pleasure, in that hee had married Belcar with Alderina, Daughter to the Duke of Pontus, and as yet the feast endured, where Recinde was enforced to abide, at the earnest intreatie of Belcar, who promised afterward to accompanie him to Constantinople: so that when the Poste arrived there, they were providing to set forward on the way.

Now were the King and Quéene not a little joyfull, when they understood that Palmendos was their Nephew, & Philocrista should marrie with so great a Prince, as was the Son to the King of Fraunce: Hereupon they concluded, not to frustrate the Emperours desire, which hee had to see them at this solemnitie. Then the messenger recounted to them, how Arnedes had remayned unknowen in the Court, without any intent to make him selfe knowen, untill the Ambassadours of Fraunce arrived there. With whome (quoth hee) there came a Knight of Spaine, that enquired after Recinde Son to the Castile King: because his eldest brother being deceased, the Subiectes of the Realme desire him for their King.

Recinde hearing these newes, being unable longer to endure, delivered forth merueylous sorrowe for the death of his Brother, saying that hee more desires his life, than all the Kingdomes in the world.

Sundrie other mournefull speeches hee proceeded in, where the King and Belcar (winding that two such Knights had so long concealed themselues) reioyced not a little, thinking thereby happily, that they had done such honour to Recin-

der with whome they vsed many reasons and sweet persuasions, to comfort and put him from his sorowfull dumpes.

The messenger being likewise glad, because hee had found the end of the Spanish knights perigrination, thus spake.

My Lord Recinde, cease these teares, which serue to no purpose, for recouering the thing that is out of all hope of men, but rather to hinder the Castillians, who desire shortly to see yee as their Lorde and King Soueraigne: For which (me thinkes) ye haue greater occasion to thanke God, than thus to torment your selfe against all reason, considering that the Scepter of Castile, is one of the most rich and honourable in all Europe. And if yee meane shortly to see the Prince Arnedes in Constantinople, who is not a little pensiue for your cause of heauines: yee will procure great ioy both in him and the whole Court of the Emperour, because each one doth wish your presence there, especially vpon so good occasion as is now offered.

When Recinde heard the Gentleman vse such speeches, he began to remember himselfe, that nowe hee was to deliuer some Heroicall spectacle, for better attayning his Lady Melicia, whome, by the sad and certaine newes of his Brothers death, he thought the soner to recouer as his owne. Wherefore he determined to make one in this Tourney, and as hee resolued on this honourable purpose, many secret discourses combatted with his spirite, which he generally imparting to Belcar, receiued this answere from him.

My Lord and Brother, although I durst not enterprise to goe so soone to Constantinople, yet would I gladly beare you companie, as well to gratifie yo herein, as any thing els I am able to deuise, because you are the man, to whom I would haue my nearest thoughtes knowen throughout my whole life, with this assurance beside, that yo shall not find any man lesse sparing of him selfe, in such matters as may be deemed agreable to yo.

Seigneur Belcar, answered Recinde, I may well say, that if Fortune heretofore hath slenderly fauored mee, entertay-

ning

ning me often with verie rigorous tearmes, yet might it bee interpreted but as a preface of vnspeakeable content in future prosperitie: for the ioy I take in being of so good account with you, surmounteth all the mishaps that haue befallen mee.

So knitting vp these courteous entercourses, they purposed to take order for their voyage, each one according to his owne best contriuing, desiring the King not to make ouer much haste, because they minded to trauaile together: For Belcar, Recinde and Tirendos required to go thither before, meaning to performe some matter of honour and worthie commendation, in the sight of the Emperour, who had neuer seene anye deedes of Belcar and Tirendos, whereto King Florendos agreed verie willingly, who notwithstanding hee was about threescore yeeres old, yet was hee neuertheleese of strong nature, able to endure the paine of trauaile.

Nowe when hee had appointed euerie thing in equipage, with a goodly companie, he set on towarde Constantinople, whither the Duke of Pontus could not come so soone as hee, for certaine businesse of importaunce that had befallen him, to the great griefe of the Princesse Alderina, that shee should so long be absent from her deare spouse Belcar. So leaue we them voyaging as time fauoured, to speake of such things as happened in the Emperours Court in meane while.

CHAP. III.

How *Ozalio* intreated *Palmendos* to accomplish the promise he made him, and he (vnwilling to deny him any thing) gaue him *Marencida* to wife, as also the Kingdome of *Tharsus*. And howe they both embarqued themselues, with a gallant companie of Knights to goe thither: And what happened the Queene, Mother to *Palmendos*, at their arriuall.

Hile the Horsemen and messengers were thus busied about their charge, the Emperour commanded preparation for the great triumph, feasting his Sonne Palmendos and the French Lords, & entertayning them with all pastimes his hart could deuise: so that the whole Court exercised themselues in nothing els, than in such things as might yeld greatest pleasure to this honorable assemblie.

Among them all that were thus contented, Ozalio had little minde of pleasaunce, seeing his Cosen altered from the Law of Mahomet, wherefore he intreated him according to his promise, that he would giue him the Princesse Marencida to wife, with leaue to returne againe to Tharsus: which motion highly pleased Palmendos, knowing that (by these meanes) the Queene his Mother should heare certaine tydinges of him.

Marencida on the other side was in no lesse paine than Ozalio, and albeit the Princesse Philocrista euermore comforted her, with such honorable meanes as became her calling: yet could she not fasten vpon any thought of pleasure, but continuing daylie solitarie, like solitude it selfe, would not come forth of her Chamber, but there all the day streamed forth fountaines of teares, complayning (without ceasing) of her aduersitie. Of one thing she might iustly make haunt, that her eyes were become sources, distilling forth water more cleare than Christall: and if she take any small pleasure or re-

creation

creation, it was only with Ozalio, who euerie houer fay-led not to visite her.

At length Palmendos went one day to conferre with her, concerning the former determination, of ioyning her in matri-age with Ozalio: but so soone as he entred the Chamber, shee began to renew her wonted griefes and passions, saying. Alas Sir Knight, wherefore come yée to renue my sorrowe, so extreame and insupportable, as death it selfe is readie to seaze on me in this place? I intreat yée, seeing the destinies haue fatallie appointed me to this endlesse torment, that yée would not vrge it the more by the meanes of your presence.

Madame, answered Palmendos, if heretofore I haue procured yée any iniurie or griefe of minde, I hope at this instant to make a final end thereof, by the meanes of an inestimable gift which I meane to bestow vpon yée, giuing yée the Knight to your husband, who esteemes and loues yée aboue al thinges in the world. Nor could the King Ocurites compare with him for valour and vertue, the heauens bearing witnes of his prowesse and dexteritie in Armes, as I know no Gentleman of the Turkish Nation, seeing him once manage dédes of Chiualrie, that dare méete him in Tourney or field-battaile, without repenting it dearely afterward. Neither could King Ocurites equall him in riches and possessions, inioying the kingdome of Tharsus which hereafter shall be his, a state more wealthie than the Prouince of Cuiaquin. For this cause (Madame) appease the violence of your passions, & consider, that your comming into this Countrie will bring yée great honour and felicitie, if yee please to accept as your lawfull husband the Prince Ozalio my Cosen, whose affectionate dilligence yée behold in your seruice. But should yée be so vnmercifull as to refuse him, yée may easily kill both his & soule together, a matter too irregular and differing from Ladies reputation, in that by nature they are rather benigne & pittiful, than bloodie and cruell, though (verie often) ouer firme in peruerse obstinacie.

Lord Palmendos, quoth Marcncida, how is it possible to con-

condiscend vnto the matter you propound mee, but by force I well may you gurdle (by the small delight I take in being in this Countrie) I will neuer doe this with my good will: albeit Seigneur Ozalio seemeth vnto me such a one, as I could not better bestow my loue vpon any, who merriteth more fauour at my hand, than he doth: but alas my fortune hath reduced me into so pittifull tearmes, that I cannot accommodate my selfe to any thing which deligliteth my spirits. Notwithstanding, if so it bee, that against the good will of your handmaide and captiue, you haue determined to effect this businesse, I pray you before I espouse the Prince Ozalio your Cosen, that I may see the king Ocurites my last husband, to the end, I may aduertise him of my disaster and of that which I am now forced to doe, being not able by my reasons any way to resist.

Thereunto do I accord most willingly, answered Palmendos, and addressing his speech to Philocrista, thus hee proceeded. Madame I humblie beseech you after dinner, to take her with you into the Emperours great chamber, to gratifie her in that which she hath presently requested.

So fell it out, after the Infant had constraynedly made her to put on her richest habilliments, in which it was a goodlye sight to behold her, for she was both faire, and of the best grace. Being come into the presence, where the Emperor was conferring with the king of Thessalie, & with manie other Princes and great Seigneurs, Palmendos commanded by and by to send for the king of Culaquin, who some after was brought thither, looking so leane chaunged, and meager of countenance, that Magencida did not know him: and had not Palmendos shewed him to her, she could not well haue guest it to be he. Then she rising vp from a chaire where shee sate, went to embrace him, the teares standing in her eyes: when she cried out. Alas! king Ocurites, which of the Planets haue wee prouoked, that doth submit vs both to this sinister fortune and inexplicable mischaunce, euen by the meanes of one onely knight? the same who vanquished and tooke you

prisoner

prisoner in the Levant-seaes, hath brought me away by force out of my Countrey, from my Father and friendes into this place, where not contented to hold me as his slaue; but will moreouer (in my despite) giue me to another husband. And that which I haue receiued of him as great fauour, is this, that he hath onely permitted me to let you vnderstand hereof, to the end I hauing once tolde you, you may not blame mee hereafter, knowing not for my part how to remedie it otherwise.

Ah, I wish the fatal Goddesses, would quickly shread a two the thrid of my life, before I consent by my will to any such occasion. Ah! If it might so well befall me, I should repute my selfe happie, as receiuing the onely contentment which I desire, is to saue mee from contaminating the receiued loue I bare you: But infortunate and miserable woman that I am, seeing death sheweth himselfe herein vnprouable, I must spend in extreame sorrow the rest of my dayes. Alas, poore King Ocunites who was wont to be so much esteemed of among the Princes and Kings of Turkye, whose prowesse and haughtie courage did farre surpasse all the hardiest and hardiest knights of Asia; where are now become thy riches and great estates? who hath dimmed the so signall and famous renowme of thy heroicall gestes, captiuing both thée and thy loyall spouse? How did fortune vngently abandon thée in this manner? O it was ambition and desire of winning honor, which hath put this slauish chaine about thy necke, placing thée among Mallie-slaues, where it shalbe best for thee to die immediatly, seeing the Emperour is our mortall and capitall enemie? O diuine prouidence, how hast thou permitted fortune to rebell thus, and to execute against vs so enormie and woful a mischiefe? Assuredly I can well vaunt that the celestiall bodies haue more fauored vs, than thou hast done terrible and greatly to vs.

She vttered manie other lamentable discourses, still detesting her accursed life. When the King Ocunites, who had giuen attentiue eare to her (knowing that she was Marcenida)

felt him selfe so confounded, and out of his wits; that he could not pronounce above five or sixe such like wordes? Alas Mahomet! did it not suffise thee to have so austerely afflicted me, but thou must reduce into so pitifull and base extreamity, the soule which did not merrite the least of all these sorrowes, which doth so much the more agraviate my torment? Ah, the most outraged King that ever was borne of his mother, shall loweth downe patiently the potion mixtured with bitternes, which thou hast prepared for him.

Speaking these wordes, hee fell his height to the ground, and Marencida fell downe heard by him, where they vied such strange gestures, that some supposed they were stricken with the falling sickness, in somuch, that they moved all the standers by to compassion: and the Emperour for his parte would willingly have delivered them, but hee not perceaved Palmendos could not honestly frustrate Ozalio, of the promise which he had made him. By meanes whereof, not to abide behalding them any longer in this pitteous Tragedie, he commaunded incontinent to recarry Ocurices to his lodging, & Marencida backe into her chamber: where she would willingly have done that for him (to save him from death) which Alceste whilom Queene of Thessalie, would only have enterpissed for Admetus her husband, after she understood by the Oracle, that any one of his friends, who would die in his stead, might save his life, which else in no wise might bee preserved.

So great was the heartes griefe Ocurices felt, during his traunce; that refusing to eat or drinke a long time after wards, he weakned so much his members, and spent his naturall vigour so farre, that his soule was constrained to take leave of his body: which was interred afterward (by commaundement of the Emperour) in a rich tombe, whereof Marencida never knew any thing: for they sought meanes expressely to conceale from her this mischaunce, fearing lest she should goe after, to keepe him company in the other world, as might bee mistrusted by the conjectures gathered of the anguish she indured,

cured, seeing him in so miserable estate, when shee founded in his presence, as you haue read before. And for that Ozalio did solicite at the length her departure with all diligence, Palmendos caused two shippes to be made readie with all things necessary, graunting him freely his departure (albeit there was much griefe on both sides, for that from their infancie they had beene both brought vp together) they gaue each other their last adieu, not without bedewing their faces with store of teares, their mindes being troubled inwardly with the strict and more than fraternall amitie betweene them: so that euerie one maruelled, why he would not for this only respect renounce Paganisme, as Palmendos had done: which hee would surely haue done, if the loue of Marencida had not so preuailed with him.

The Emperour gaue them many sumptuous presentes, to carrie from him to the Queene of Thracia; which being bestowed in fit place on ship boorde, hee commaunded to hoyse sailes, and so incontinent launched into the maine sea, which was so calme and still, that within seuen dayes hee fell within the coast of Thracia. So soone as he was arriued in the hauen, all the Citie began to make bone fires, and many other tokens of ioy, thinking to recouer their true & liege Soueraigne Palmendos: But soone after changed their reioycing into sadnes; when they knew certainly Palmendos was so farre from that place, where they thought him to be present; all the people doing nothing else but curse and ban the old Beldame, and also condemne the losse of so noble and gentle a Prince. At this time the Queene lay grieuously sicke in her bed, for the absence of her louing Palmendos, so that being Ozalio arriued without the chamber, her heart felt presently such an vnwonted anguish, that she had neyther knew, sense, nor vnderstanding, which was not depriued of their vsuall function, but vnderstood by the Ambassage, which the Emperour commaunded to Ozalio to offer her with his presents, the new [illegible] [illegible]

This honourable Lady hauing thus accomplished the last law of nature, and yelded to God her most iust homage: Ozalio gaue the principals of the kingdome to vnderstand of the ordenance of Palmendos his Cosen: wherby vpon calling them together some after the decease of the Queene, he shewed them sait sealed, and so subscribed as they ought to bee: by which meanes they all knowing him to bee a most sage and valerous Prince, accepted him gladly for their king.

Thus hauing peaceably inuested himselfe in the kingdome, he married forthwith in great triumph and magnificence, his deare Marencida, who seeing the loue her husband bare her, to increase more and more every day, conuerted her mourning and sorrow into thankfull gladnes: so that within few daies she quite forgate all things past, louing afterwards perfectly the good King Ozalio her second husband, that shee had by him many godlie children, many whereof proued very braue and hardie Knights.

Thus feasting them whom he toke from Constantinople, for to accompanie him homeward, at length he returned them backe againe with such newes and rich giftes, which the king Ozalio sent to his Cosen Palmendos, as hee (in mentoris hereof) continued the same euery yeare following in like manner, for tribute and homage of the high estate, which he confessed onely to hold of him.

No sooner were the Knightes arriued in the Emperours Court, but Palmendos was aduertised of the death of the Queene his mother: whereupon he grew into a great melancholie, and made woefull lamentation, seeming to him that his absence was the principall cause of her death: but he loued Franchelina so ardently, that hee could not well hide his spirites in any other thing, than in those which he knew might cause her delight and pleasure: wherefore in time hee forgot the sorrow which these heauie newes caused, especially seeing himselfe so comforted by his loue, whom hee will now learne to take the gratious pastimes, wherwith those that are neerely affianced and wont to sollace one another, attending the

wilfull

wished day of their Nuptials. And so turning over vnto Risarano, whome we shall finde yet in the house of the Countesse of Island.

CHAP. LIII.

How *Risarano* being departed from the Countesse of *Island*, to go to the Tourney which was to be held in *Constantinople*: met with his companion *Ledesio*, with whome hee fought to reuenge a pore Damsell, whose husband hee had slaine.

RIsarano, who Combated Dioll the Earle of Islands brother, if you remember, remayned some time with the Countesse his wife, as well to heale his wounds thoroughly (especially that in the scull of his head, which hee was faine to counterfe, and haue throughly searched) as also for the pleasure and graunt of amourous fauours, which he receiued daylie of her: by meanes whereof he could not leaue her, till he was aduertised from the Emperour Palmerin (who holde an open Court in Constantinople, and of the great Triumphes, which were there in preparation, to solemnize the alliance & Nuptials of the Infant Phillorista with Arnedes Sonne to the King of Fraunce, likewise of the Prince Francheline with Palmendos, desiring to lose no good occasion, to present himselfe in so honorable a company, which hee hoped should there meete at this solemne feast: hee demaunded license of the Countesse to goe see the Prince Palmendos, at whose hands he had heretofore receiued so much fauour that he thought he had his life but of him and the immortall God, who might and is when it shall please him: Whereunto being loth and vnwilling the accustomed doubt made her feare should not returne againe to her so soone as he had promised, and that in time hee should forget her: for when a thing is farre out of sight, it is the sooner out of remembrance.

And shee good reader, the bigger she felt her selfe with child, so much more did her sorrow redouble: that euer with a verie feeble voice, which did sufficiently demonstrate the trouble of her minde, she praide him of all loues hee would sometimes remember her, whome his departure left in a wearisome distresse. Against the which I cannot long time holde out, quoth she, but death will preuent me, unles you purpose speadylie to make your returne: and thereby shall I know if you desire to prolong my life or no, which I put altogether into your handes.

Madame, answered Rifarano, too insupportable a paine would it be to me, if I should frustrate you of my speedy returne, for in steede of one onlie torment (which peraduenture I should suffer more easily, making mine absence but of small continuance) too intolerable a care for you might suffocate my soule, bearing you still in mynde conceiue some mistrust against mee: so that I pray you beleeue, no obiect whatsoeuer which may present it selfe before mine eyes, shall euer be said or seene, that shall cause I will debare your Image to liuely figured within my soule: would to God (deare mistres) I could take away the temple you may alleadge, that I abandon you willingly: For I assure my selfe you doe not so, knowing well the testimony of my loyaltie, and preparat[illegible] towards your excellencie, shall alwaies put you out of feare.

The Prince hauing vnderstood all, after the Countesse, returne as speedily as he could possibly, was much comforted thereby: and giuing him for a present a most magnificent coate of Armes of greene colour, praide him to weare it for her sake: The rest to take one of her seruants [illegible] to the end she might at all occurrences [illegible] him, for he misdoubted much, he would not [illegible] as she would haue him, as hereafter you shall heare: for many times she was purposed to haue driuen her selfe into, as did forrowful Phillis, saying she rather chose that Death, then should espouse her.

Rifarano being departed from the Damselle, he rode three dayes without finding any aduenture, and on the fourth passing verie early neere vnto a Castell, he saw lie before the Gate the Lord thereof dead vpon his bed, couered and cloathed with many clothes of silke: at whose beds head sate a yong Damsell making most strange and pitifull lamenting, that the verie panting breath of her sighes did well shew, in what manner her hart did beat within her breast. All about her were many Damsels and others, whose countenances and pitteous cries which they powred forth into the ayre, did plainely bewray the great griefe they had to see this dead corpes, the which they made as though they would carrie to burriall, whē Rifarano approached, to know what moued them to lament so much, promising them for recompence to worke his reuenge according to his power, if in case there were anie neede to doe it.

Then the Damsell (thanking him much for his so gratious and courteous offer,) began in this manner to be speake him. Faire Knight, although my misfortune be so extreame, that I cannot well imagine whether I liue or no, yet the assurance which I conceiue, that you haue taken some pittie of my mishap, will giue me argument to deliuer you the whole discourse: albeit it would bee better peraduenture I should conceale it, to the end I may no further stirre vp the sorrowe beauines seated in my soule.

Know then my Lord, that this my dead husband going yesterday abroad on hunting, met by the way a Knight, whome for his courteous sake, he brought home to lodge here all night, & (for his better entertainment) commaunded me to doe him all the seruice I might deuise, in that he seemed to him to bee discended of some great house: albeit he knew him not before, for he would neuer tell his name nor whence he was. I hauing therein freely accepted the commaundement of my husband, did him all the honour I could deuise, so that we supped together in great ioy and content: but afterward, I perceiued he neuer remoued his eyes from mine, which made my hart as cold as ice, when I saw no bodie about vs, for all our seruants

mantes were gone to Supper, I sente as they had done vnto
me.

Then the Traitor began to giue some enterprise to the dis-
simule which he deuised craftily, saying he was going to the
Court of the Emperour of Constantinople, to present him-
selfe at the magnificent Tourney which is as prepared for the
Nuptials of his Daughter: This was the cause that my hus-
band (for he loued greatly the exercise of Armes) rose sodain-
ly from the table, to commaund his Squiers to haue all his e-
quipage in a readinesse to depart the morrow morning with
him: by this occasion the disloyall man finding the time and
place fit for his purpose, vsed vnto mee these speeches: Truely
faire Lady, paragon of the most perfect Damsels, I thinke
it had bene far better for mee, neuer to haue entred into your
house, than to remaine long time in the paine which I feele
for your excellent beautie hath so rauished my hart, that if the
baume wherein consisteth the onely cure of this wound be not
quickly applied thereunto, I must néedes dye through the vi-
olent and vehemente heate which hath set it on fire. Further
did he prosecute his sugared and deceauing language, when I
who could not endure to hearken to it, was very wroth with
him, saying: It seemeth faire sir, you are a knight little cour-
teous, and wanting good manners, seeing you will vse such an
act against him, who hath done you so much honour.

Pardame quoth hee againe, thinke not I am come to dis-
please you, nor to procure you any damage, but to saue and
my selfe from the variable and perilous accidents, into which
the darkenes of the night and tempole sometimes throwe those
are wandring out of their waies, so that I pray you not to
blame me nor reprehend me therin of indiscretion, but rather
accuse your own Graces, which haue prouoked, and constrai-
ned me to vse these rearines vnto you: no reason being able
to sway ouer the impatient desire which torments me: and so
he had thus said, he put forth his armes to embrace me: whom
I resisted withall my might, and being inflamed with an in-
supportable choller, I rose vp from the table, crying aloude

In an ill houre camest thou hether yesterday, Tellan, to commit so great a contempt in these Countries: I spake these words so loud, that my poore and infortunate husband heard mee easely, who perceiuing the treason of this treacherous wretch: as an inraged person, ran furiously to his Armes, menacing him, that he would make him dearely buy his villanie: notwithstanding the wicked villaine, who had then his weapon at his side, hearing him make these threates, set hand quickly to it to stand vpon his guard, and before my husband could assaile him: hee thrust his sworde vppe to the hilts with such a violence, that it came cleane through his bodie. Which these sorrowfull eyes of mine beholding, I began to cry out like a woman depriued of her wits, and as all luche happned, there was not found one in all the Castell, who had power or courage to take Armes, to reuenge me of this Barbarian, for that the two brethren of my diseased husband, (who are trusted here to bee Knights, that he had not dared to haue perpetrated this hainous fact in their presence) tooke a iourney the day before, all the men of defence with them into the Countrie. By meanes whereof this fellon and cruell murtherer, had time enough to arme him selfe, and to make away from the Castell, where (after the murther) he staied not aboue a quarter of an houre: in which space I could not aduertise my neighbours, the place where I dwell being far in the fields, and remote from all other habitations.

Still you haue heard how by treason the Knight, my husbande of my diligence, hauing ill hap perforce put to death, wherein, besides the disaster of my husbande, (which can not now be remedied,) I account my selfe much dishonored of the heauens and fortune, hauing no meanes to finde out one, who will for mine entertainde seruice, reuenge the Authour of my sorrowfull ruine: and he who [illegible] who will not affirme him to bee trecherous, and [illegible] who will condemne him vpon this quarrell, as [illegible]

he hath taken, and the coate of Armes which hee beareth, to thee to I may haue some knowledge of him the better: in the meane time, pray vnto God that I may méete with him, if you desire to be reuenged: for to that effect doe I purpose to bend all my forces, or else they shall fayle mee at my greatest néede.

Faire Knight, a thousand thankes I yéeld you, answered the Damsell for your curtesie and good will, the which certes I knew to be no lesse when first you began to speake, which puts me in some good hope, that I shall bee reuenged by your hand: and through this meane shall you binde me to so great obligation towards you, that hardly shall I euer bee able to cancell it, if of your grace you may not accept for satisfaction thereof, the desire that I haue to employ my selfe for you in all honest requestes wherein it shall please you to commaunde mee.

This Knight hauing learned the way and the markes, whereby he might discrie him who had slaine his horse, bee tooke leaue of the Damsell all so bee blubbered with weeping, that whoso euer had séene her, would haue iudged two channels to haue béene made artificiall vpon her cheekes, through the abundance of teares falling incessantly from her two eies: Hée rode all that day without méeting him, but neuer he heard at the entring into a forrest, that bee went that way not farre before him: where béeing ouertaken by night, hee purposed to repose himselfe till day. But he could not sléepe a whyle, because he fell into a déepe thought, how he might depart after the Tourney, to take his voyage into Almaine towards the Emperour Trineus his Father: herewith was his spirit so disquieted, that he was forced two houres before day to remount on horsebacke: And galloping as fast as hee could, bee was gone before the sunne rising some leagues, which they counted from the forrest to a little village, where lay that night the Knight whome bee sought, enquiring after him of those whome he met, he was a ware of him where hee was mounting by the side of a hillocke, not farre from the

place whence he was not a quarter of an houre before diſlodged, and went an eaſie pace: Rifarano well a paid hereof, ſpurred his horſe to ouertake him, which hee did before hee was gotten to the foote on the other ſide of the hill. As ſoone then as the murtherer entred the plaine, and began to ſet ſpurres to his horſe to goe a little faſter, Rifarano called aloud vnto him deſcending into the bottome: Hola Sir Knight tarrie: I ſhall keepe you from vaunting to haue ſlaine trayterouſly a gentleman, who receiued you with all humanitie into his Caſtell, and that you did a little ſo raſhly rauiſh your ſelfe with the loue of his wife.

When the Knight aſſailed heard his menacing, he preſently turned bridle, and vayling his launce, ſtaide for him courageouſlie, without ſtirring a foote: for ſeeing him in company of one onely Eſquire, he was nothing amazed but anſwered him verie ſtoutlie: Knight you are come to reuenge the death of him, who will make you loſe your life: I thinke therefore it were better for you (if you deſire euer to ſee her againe for whome you reſolue to combat mee) to withdraw your ſelfe from ſo great an enterpriſe, leauing to counterfet the butterfly, who after ſhe hath found the light, can neuer goe from it, till in the end ſhe haue ſet her ſelfe on fier.

We ſhall quickly ſee, replied then Rifarano, howe God can chaſtice the ouerweening and Arrogancie of Traitors, ſuch as you are, who for the luſt of their ſenſuall appetites, corrupt the inuiolate lawes of hoſpitalitie: ſpeaking theſe words, they encountered with ſuch a power, and breaking both their Launces one vppon another, as Rifarano was a little wounded with that of his aduerſarie, whome hee ſent in ſo bad caſe to the ground, that he could hardly riſe againe. Neuertheleſſe being magnanimious, and could manage Armes well, he quickly put hand to his ſword, and thruſting his arme into his ſhield as ſoone as he could, he gaue ſo peſant a blow vppon Rifaranos horſe head, that he made him fall downe dead betwixt his legs, from whome he leapt off nimbly, ſaying all in rage and choller: Now I ſee well your occupation is to betraye

saith, I deny you have to discourse of all that may passe, for which I hope to make you pay dearely before you passe.

With that woordes began Rifarano to strike home, and to shew him in such strange manner, that (being more valiant and stronger made for Armes than his enemie,) within a small space he layd him on the ground at his feete, where laying him lie a long in a traunce, her ran upon him to giue him the mortall guerdon of his demerits: which shee had done, if the Knight (who felt himselfe in extreame perill of his life) had not cryed out, saying: Alas! thy Cosen Rifarano, where art thou now, that thou canst not succor me in this necessity wherein I see my selfe? Certaine I assure my selfe, full sorrie wilt thou be, when thou shalt heare tydings of my death. It was Leocrin his companion, who for the cure of his woundes, which hee received in fighting with Arnedes Prince of Fraunce, when he slew the Hermite who would have parted them (as you have read before,) retired himselfe into a Nunnerie: Where by meanes of a Religious sister, who did verie well understand the methode of Chirurgerie, he was carefully looked vnto till his perfect recouerie. Notwithstanding, during his cure, the Abbesse who was Daughter of a great Parentage, faire, young, and comely, knowing that her did not boudge from the Emperours Court, came often times to visite him; insomuch, that this continuall visitation ingendred some sparkes of amorous passion: the which by little & little kindled in them both in such sort, that it could not lye long dissembled; but Leocrin was constrained (by the way which seemed most commodious vnto him) to discouer vnto his Lady the seruitude into which her loue had reduced him, praying her to haue regard to the infirmitie which he felt in hart, farre more corrosiue than that of his outward griefes.

By meanes whereof the young Nunne, who felt her selfe scorched with the like flame, and who in this matter did not desire to be a long time praide, to yeild the keyes of the Forte which was assailed, resolued one day with Leocrin to meete together to parley thereof secretly, out of the presence of witnesses

nesses vnrequested to stand by when such a fortresse is to bee scaled.

Vpon which platfourme, at the first encounter were deliuered some rude skeadoes on the assayfours side, whilst the defendant rewarded valiantly with her buckler of proofe: And afterward so often renewed this Alarum, which was expedient to vse against a fortresse, that could not well be wonne at the first proffer (because of the small breach that one only blow of Cannon can make:) that the Abbesse would willingly haue left her breuiarie behinde, thus to haue managed still the Iauelin, and at all times to finde her selfe in such skirmishes: Whereby it fell out that Leucsio (after his recouerie) remained in garrison within the Abbie; vntill hee was so wearie with being euery day on horse backe, with his Launce in rest (which for the same purpose he was taine to haue very strong, well pointed, better steeled, and tempered) as hee departed to put him selfe in quest of Rifarano, of whose absence hee was assured, and of the very day that he departed from the Court of the Emperour Palmerin. He resolued to take the way for Almaine as soone as he should finde him: for he meant to returne no more to Constantinople, because of the touch he had serued Arnedes, which he knew well to bee made known ouer all Greece: but trauersing many clymates without any newes of him whome he sought, he purposed to go vnknowne to the Nuptials of Philocrista, hoping to meete him there, or els in no other region of Europe.

So trauelling that way, hee met (as you haue read) with the Knight whom he slew in his house: wherein no marueile though he rashly discouered his vnchaste and lasciuious affects to his wife, for hee was neuer better conditioned: nor was there found in him courtesie, loyaltie, or any other vertue, by the which a man of good behauiour may be esteemed: nor did he euer change this his lewd nature and detestable manner of liuing, till he was enamoured verie strangely on one of the Emperour Trineus Daughters, for to please whom he began afterward to vse a little more honest ciuilitie.

CHAP. V.

Howe *Risarano* knew *Ledesin*, whome hee caused afterwards to be cured of his wounds: reprehending him much for his discourtesie: and how they arriued in *Constantinople* vnknowne, and embarqued themselues afterward to goe to *Allmaine*, where they were honourably entertained by the Emperour *Trineus*: and what befell *Risarano* afterwards.

To returne to our matter, when Risarano heard the lamentable wordes of Ledesin, he marueiled as though hee had entred into some newe world, and knowing not what to thinke, demaunded him forthwith his name: but Ledesin hurt with the fall, and sore affonted with the feare hee had to end his life, could not answere him one word. By meanes whereof he went presently to disarme his head, and assone as he had perceiued him, he felt within himselfe such a sorrowfull passion, that hee fell downe in a traunce hard by him: which his Squire seeing ran to him to vnlace his helmet, for to giue him aire that he might come to himselfe againe. Suddainely hee cald his speech to him againe, beginning so pittifull a complaint, that by the strange exclamations which hee continued, Ledesin at last opened his eyes, and beholding hard by him Risarano his faithfull friend, whome hee had called to his succour: liue more not aske what astonishment hee was in, when he said to him thus.

Deare friend, if now I die presently, my soule shall goe in great ioy to repose in heauenly blisse: seeing I see you before it depart from my body, which seeketh it selfe verie sore wounded, by the waight and force of your hand. If so it be (quoth Risarano) that you die by this encounter, well may I assure you that all the dayes of my life, no man shall euer see me merie: and demaunding whether hee felt himselfe so ill, that hee could not goe thence to seeke some cure, he answered him, hee

should

should peraduenture endure to sit a little on horse backe, albeit he had brought him but into a very bad taking. Then Risarano & his Squire disarmed him, and wrapping vp his wounds as well as they could, they conducted him vnto the next Cittie from thence, where they committed him into a Chirurgians hands, who assured them of speedie recouerie.

Whereof Risarano was full glad, but more it chafed him, when each one recounting their fortunes past to one another, vnderstood the outrage offered by Ledesin to the Prince Arnedes. He reprehended and rebuked him greatly therefore, saying, these were not parts be seeming knights extracted of so high Parentage: and that hee reputed it a great indiscretion in him; a Sinne, to loue Philocrista being a Christian, and of a Law contrarie to his.

Moreouer he blamed much his great impudencie towards the Gentlewoman, whose husband hee slew: requesting him in the end herie amiably, he would vse no more those trickes of youth, so farre distant from the vertuous honestie of an illustrious and generous heart.

Ledesin ashamed to heare him preaching thus on his imperfections: promised to leaue all lewdnes, and to follow such good counsell as it should please him to giue him: And as they had determined of their voyage, they concluded to send Risaranos Squire to Constantinople, to the Knights who came with them from Persia, to aduertise them, that they should haue the Shaffer of their ship in a readines, to depart without making speech thereof to any man liuing. So the Squire was presently sent away for this purpose, whose arriuall caused great gladnes in the Persians, hauing not a good while before heard any newes of their Shaffers. Afterward when Ledesin felt himselfe strong inough to endure trauaile with his Armes, and Risarano hadde refreshed himselfe well, they came both to Constantinople, where they found no small number of Knights, arriued there before; to the to themselues in the Tourney: at the which they would not be present, fearing it would be some disturbance to their Nauigation, but rather

ques themselues on the morrow before day, which displeased Rifarano verie much, for that hee could not take his leaue of the Emperour, nor of Palmendos, whom he desired to see aboue all other.

Wherefore calling to him the Squire of the Countesse who followed him, hee commaunded him before his departure from thence, he should present himselfe before the Emperour, and to tell him that Rifarano recommended himselfe most humbly to the good grace of his Maiestie: beseeching him of excuse if he could not come himselfe to doe the message: for that by reason of some businesse which was of great importance he was constured to depart in all haste, to the end to arriue with more speed in Germanie, and that he would ere long returne to make amends by his humble seruice, for the honour which he had receaued in his Court: Then giuing him many rich presents as well for himselfe as his Maiestie, commaunded him assoone as hee had discharged his dutie towards the Emperour, he should returne to his Graue, to pray her from him shee should not thinke amisse of him, if during his abode with her, he neuer told her the name of his house and linage: For which he would come to make amends, hauing remayned some fewe dates in Almaine, whether he was going with Leceflo to see the Emperour Trineus his Father: and that in the meane time she should make account of him, as of the most affectionate seruant shee might finde in the vniuersall world.

After these speeches the Pilot began to cut with his ship the spacious plaine of salt waters, leauing vpon the shore the Squire verie pensiue and sorrowfull to abandon this his Master: but after he had called his courage to him, he went to do his embassage to Palmendos and the Emperour, who was full sorie for his secret departure, because he would haue sent Rifarano home to his Father with more honour.

The Countesse of Isaude vnderstanding by her Squier that her Paramour was in Iuforth, and had already taken his way towards Germanie, shee had almost died for sorrow:

so that twoing afterwardes some extreme penaunce for her offence, after the end of nine Monethes, she brought into this world a goodly Sonne, who inherited the Earledome of Island after the decease of his mother: and following military Discipline did atchieue verie noble many strange thinges in Fraunce, whether he went to see his Father who was Duke of Burgundie, as you shall understand by the discourse of our Historie.

With this Childe the Countesse tooke so great comfort that by little and little she forgot the loue of Rifarano, whom we will nowe come to finde making sale in the Adriaticke Sea, where he had so happie Nauigation, that within seue daies hee came vppon the coast of Germanie: and casting his ankers in a Porte foure dayes iourney distant from the Emperour Trineus Court, they went thither in compleate armes, except the head.

In deede being arriued at the Pallace, Rifarano fell on his knees before his Father, demaunding his hande to kisse it. The good Prince Trineus who vnderstode long time before, by letters from the Emperour of Greece of his Sonnes arriuall in Constantinople, (which hee then priuentlie imparted to the Empresse his wife, who greatly desired to knowe what they were,) seeing these two strange Knightes, misdoubted lest the one should be him: whereof serued for a good testimonie the gladnesse which hee shewed in his heart when he saide: Sir Knight to giue you my hand, I may not willingly consent, before I knowe who you are.

My Lorde replyed hee againe, in places where I am knowne they call mee Rifarano, and this my companion Echefin, Sonne to the Soldan of Persia, and to Zerpintapeur most affectionate friends.

O then you are thrice welcome quoth the Emperour into the place, where your arriuall ouercommeth mee with gladnes: So saide he embracing them, hauing for very ioie so neere the teares in his eyes, that he could hardly abstaine, but some one did fall to the ground, when he began thus.

Ah! my sonne, happie may I thinke the perill and danger I past to beget you, seeing that I see you now so prayse-worthie fruite of my labour, that all my life I shall for my part, praise God for so great a grace: but how could you stay so long away, before you would come to see me, considering your valour and Chivalrie did much increase my desire thereunto? Alas, It was the heauen which being enuious and iealous of my blisse, could not permit me to enioy your presence.

Hauing done this speech, her welcomed herte courteously Lecheſin, & in the meane time they had this honest and gratious communication, came in many Nobles who vnderstood newes of Rifarano, to entertaine him the most honourablie they could: So that the Emperour who knew herie well the Empresse would be most glad of this occurrence, taking the two Knights, the one in the right hand, and the other in the left, went to finde her in her Chamber saying.

Madame these Princes the one who is of the Soldan of Persiaes sonnes, and the other ouer whom you haue absolute power to commaund, come to do you their humble reuerence, and to offer you their seruice in any thing whatsoeuer wherein it shall please you to employ them.

Then the Empresse rising from her chaire ran to embrace them both with great loue, especially Rifarano to whome she saide: My sonne I haue now good occasion to reioyce mee of your presence, and to cherrish you as mine owne Childe, seeing you resemble him so naturally, who following his destinie, gaue you your essence among men, whome I loue aboue mine owne person, with zeale so entire and perfect, that it extendeth and redoundeth far ouer yours.

Madame, quoth Rifarano, nature hath so fullie accomplished you with all vertues, that there can proceed from you nothing but a sincere good will, for which I thanke you most humblie in mine owne behalfe, albeit it much surpasseth my little merite: which shall cause me to put this kindnes into the number of manie others which you haue so well bestowed on mee, that all my life I shall finde my selfe much bounden

vnto

vnto you.

Then hee kiſt her hand with the honour and reuerence which appertaineth to ſo high a Ladie, and next did embrace Vernan her eldeſt ſonne, a Prince ſurely rarelie inſtituted in good manners and vertuous education: which well hee could ſhew by the gentle entertainment he made him in recognitiance of this new fraternitie, albeit he were verie young of yeares. Shee held the ſecond place of three male Children, and of two female which they had at one birth: whereof the firſt lined not long: becauſe this was not in age marriageable, the alliance of the houſes of Almaine with that of Conſtantinople could not be redoubled giuing him to Philocriſta, whome the Prince of Fraunce had neuer other wife eſpouſed, their eldeſt Daughter of the age of fourteene (called Bellerisa) was verie faire, yet not ſo faire as the younger. But the Emperour cauſed the two Knights to bee diſarmed, and by & by to inueſt two magnificent robes which he gaue them with manie other riche preſentes, and likewiſe to all the Perſian Knights who came with them, determining as well for their arriuall and the mariage of his neece Philocriſta, as alſe for the recognitiance of the neece affinitie of Palmedos to make a ſumptuous feaſt, and to hold the eight dayes following open Court: During the which Bellerisa ſhewed her ſelfe ſo quaint and curious to entertaine with gratious diſcourſe her brother Riſarano, that thence forth Lucheſin ſerting himſelfe with her long, as long as he lined could neuer quite extinguiſh this fire out of his heart, wherein ſerued him for a baite the fauour which ſhe ſhewed him to gratifie her brother, deuiſing manie times together which gaue ſome refreſhing to his burning feuer.

After a few dayes come and gone, the Emperour gaue Riſarano to vnderſtand the great pleaſure hee tooke of his arriuall: Notwithſtanding it would be far greater, when hee ſhould perceiue in him ſome deſire to receaue the holie water of Chriſtianitie: ſo that quoth hee, if I doe not ſee you determin quicklie to condiſcend vnto the beliefe of our faith, I ſhall thinke

thinke you make account to returne into Persia, which would plunge me in a guife of griefes, and unsupportable sorrowes.

God forbid answered Rifarano, that I should ever cause you to take any displeasure at mee: I had rather teare my selfe in a thousand peeces, than not to accomplish that which it pleased you to propound mee: with this answere was the Emperour well apaid, so that to make it to some effect, hee went with him on the morrowe to the Fount of Baptisme, where by the hande of a discreete Bishoppe hee receaued the first Christian vnction, where at Lecheſin take such a griefe, that all that day and the next he could not shew a merrie countenance.

Which Bellerisa marking, who honoured and governed him continually, praied him not to take any displeasure at the act of Rifarano his companion: for that where he had not speedilie resolued to doe it, his affaires had not beene so great, especiallie of the Emperour, who thought himselfe much beholden to him, in that he had fulfilled his minde therein. Sweet sonne you loue him quoth shee, with so cordiall affection as you saye, I meruaile much why you doe not the same, hauing that you know the superioritie of our God doth much abase yours: whome if you will renounce, you neede not doubt but riches, estates, and whatsoeuer you shall demaunde of my Lorde and Father, shall want you no more here, than in your owne Kingdome.

If you faire Madame, replyed he then, will promise mee one fauour, onely for the loue of you will I bee Baptized incontinent, for the deuotion which giueth me that which I demaunde you, constrayneth mee to hate alcedie the Pagan Sect.

Surely Seigneur Lecheſin, quoth she againe, I should repute my selfe vnkind and after my life vnfortunate, and vnworthie to come into any good companie, if to bee a meanes of so great good, I should refuse any thing which were in my power: assuring me that you will not request me of any

thing

thing which may offende the humour of the one, nor of the other of us two, the which being saued, I will doe my best to satisfie your desire, as much as in me lieth.

Howe may I call my selfe thrice, and foure times happie, quoth Lechesin, seeing I see so precious a gyft so freely offered mee, whereof I lost all hope that it would never be by me acquired, which I will not demaunde of you Madame, until that you shall see me accomplish my promise, which by this occasion hath willingly made me accept of your commandement: wherevnto to give some beginning, hee saide vnto the Emperour, that seeing his sonne had left the Mahometicall law, hee would doe no lesse than hee had done: because their more than Fraternall amitie might not suffer a diversitie of faith betweene them.

If the gladnesse of the Emperour were great for the conversion of Risarano, it was doubled so much more, hearing Lechesin vse this faire language: so that remitting his pompe but till the morrowe morning onelie, he was received into the Catalogue of Christians by the same Bishop, and in the same Fount that Risarano was, having for his Godmother the Empresse, and the Emperour for his Godfather, who when the Ceremonie was finished, bespake him in this manner.

You have nowe my Godsonne, vowe the acte of a vertuous and worthie Knight, forsaking the erroneous and detestable Doctrine which you held, to embrace our holie and Catholike religion.

By meanes whereof I will holde and account you hereafter for mine owne proper borne, giving you such Estates in my Countrie whereby you may most honorablie live by, and maintaine your selfe after your owne content.

Lechesin thanked him most humblie, and prayed him not to repute him lesse affectioned to his service, than the most loyall and faithfull kinsman or allie whome he had in his race. Whereof the Emperour thanked him, who for

this regard obtayned to continue a feaste throughout all his Court, & the Empreſſe gaue the name Trioll vnto Riſarano for the loue of his Father, becauſe ſhee would not haue him called any more by that name which he brought out of Barbarie. But Lechefin toke no great care to chaunge his, hauing in hand matters which did much more moue his ſpirite, to the which he would aſſay to giue ſome tranquillitie: ſo that finding Bellerisa one houre of the day fit for his purpoſe, he vſed this gratious ſpæch to her.

Madame it ſeemeth to me I haue obayed your commandement, which I reuerence and will reuerence all my life as an oracle, and God graunt you may by this meanes knowe the extreame deuotion I haue to your ſeruice; This is the matter, I would humblie beſæch you to call to minde the promiſe you made me preſentlie thereupon, hauing ſome pittie of an inſupportable torment that my afflicted hart hath felt euer ſince the firſt time I ſaw you. You know the offer that the Emperour your father hath made me of his Grace: as touching which I hope not to demaund of him anything elſe but you in mariage: and if ſo great happines befall me, that I be not therein fruſtrate, I ſhall reckon my ſelfe the moſte fortunate knight who euer marched vnder the celeſtiall Machine.

Alas quoth the Damſell, how could you weaue ſo ſubtilly the ſnare wherein I now find my ſelfe entrapped? In good faith I neuer thought making you promiſe, that your carriage tended to this end: Neuertheleſſe, ſeeing you accorded mee ſo eaſily no meane matter, which maketh me ſurely much bounden to you, for my part I will acquite my promiſe, ſo that you doe not tranſgreſſe the limitters and bounds of honour, which I muſt hold as deare as my life. And to the end to ſhew by a good beginning that I am not ingratefull for your ſo great fauour, I accept you for my knight, with aſſurance to obey you hence forth no leſſe amitie than to Trioll my Brother: wherein if my Lorde and father commaund mee any thing farther, I ſhall conſent with a herie good will, to returne you

the guerdon, which so good will as yours doth merite: wee may well imagine what was the ease & content of Leochelin, knowing there was giuen (and that by his verie Lady) some refrigeration to the burning of his flame: which begunne to line and kindle so lustie afterwards in Bellarisaes hart, that it was within a while no lesse vehemente than that of her Lauer: Who by this meane became more hardie and courageous than euer hee was before: committing afterwards no thing which might staine his honour, but in Joustes Tourneyes which were held in those quarters, he carried away still the greatest part of the honour, as the best Champion nerte after Troll, who farre surmounted all those of that Countrie: Therefore both the one and the other were greatly esteemed by the Emperour and the Potentates of Almaine: where wee will leaue them a while, to passe their time according to the renowne and commendation which they shall win, to recount the Tournies and great magnificences made in the meane time in Constantinople in attending the Tourney, held at the Nuptials of Palmendos and Franchelina.

CHAP. VI.

How the County *Peter* one of the French Ambassadors, determined to hold eight daies together continuall Iousles against all commers to *Constantinople*, which hee did for the honour and beautie of Ladies, attending the opening of the great tourney, which *Primaleon* caused to be published before: And how the Duke of *Drauce* vassall to the King of *Thessalie*, was the first who entered the listes against him.

YOu haue vnderstoode heretofore howe the Emperour Palmerin, sent to inuite manie great Princes and Seigneurs of Greece, to be at the Nuptials of his Daughter Philocrisia: wherein the posts and messengers did so well their diligences, that in short time after, there arriued the great

part

part of the Barrens from all Countries vnder his obedience, in the best equipage they could.

Amongst the Princes of Sparque, there arriued first, the King of Sparta and the Queene Arismene his wife, Aunt to the Emperour, who brought thither with them one onely Daughter which they had, being not twelue yeares of age, but verie beautifull, and of the best grace, called Amandria: Before whom the Emperour came forth to welcome and entertaine them, commanding his Fourriers & Harbingers to marke out for them all the body of the great Serraglia neere his quarter: But the Emperour had Philocrista and two other yong daughters, whereof the eldest who was called Florida betweene thirteene and fourteene yeares of age (certes as fayre as the day) resembled very much the Empresse her mother. Who after the marriage of Philocrista, was put in her place, being giuen vnto her many Damsels and the same Estate that her sister had, so that she kept the Empresse alwaies company as did her sister Philocrista before. To be briefe, as for the graces and perfections wherwith nature deyned worthy her gentle and diuine spirit, she was the pearle of honour, the Idea of beauty, and the matchles Paragon of all good grace: seeing that euen from her infancie she was reputed in sagesse, vinacity and quickines of spirit, a new or second Pallas: being a Princesse fayrer demeasured and well abuted, she acquainted her selfe, and grew into such league of amity and louing kindnes with her Cosen Amandria, that they did neuer part company.

At the arriuall of the King of Sparta, thether, the Emperour his Nephewe conceiued a marueilous ioy: The which was redoubled when her vnderstode that the King his father came accompanied with Belcar and Recindes the future King of Castile: whereof Prince Arnedes was not glad a little: nor the Spanish gentleman who did attende for him in that Court, and the Infant Melissa was most ioyfull of all, for the hope she had to see him quickly her husband.

From diuers other strange Regions and Countries, came euery

euerie day Knights to the Court, where they were all curteouslie receaued by Primaleon: Especiallie a great Troupe of Thessalian Barrons, who came thither to kisse their Kings hand: and also to see Palmendos whome they blessed, and by their praiers lodged him aboue the heauens: laiuding God who gaue the such a Prince for Seigneur: whom for his part hee cherished and honoured in the best maniner, which contented them most of all. Moreouer thither came the good Knight Frisoll King of Hungarie, whether could not his Queene accompanie him because shee was verie sicke: And the Emperour stayd but for King Florendos his Father, before he would begin the feast and solemnitie of the Nuptials, when the French Embassadors who were there (seeing so manie Princes and braue Knights gathered together) pricked forward through desire of glorie, determined to enterprise some Martiall exercise to passe away idlenes. The formost of whome was the Earle Peter, a verie braue and hardie knight, who loued (as his own soule,) Isortine the Duke of Sauoyes Daughter: the same man whome the Emperour Palmerin vanquished in Gaule, who afterward espoused Lucimine, Daughter to the King of Fraunce: by whome he had three male Children verie braue knights, and that only daughter faire in perfection, whome hee caused to bee brought vp in the Court of his Father in law.

The Earle desired extreamely to haue her in marriage, and for that purpose did he marueilous deeds of Armes as her Knight: for the great loue that hee bare her renewed his forces, and encreased his courage in such sort, that hee was esteemed one of the best Champions of the Kingdome, which was cause the King of Fraunce chose him for second Ambassadour in this treatie of marriage betweene Arnedes and Philocrista. Vpon a day whilst the Emperour was conferring with the King of Sparra, this French Earle came to beseech him in presence of the assistance, to giue him leaue to make a close Tilt yeard in the great place of the Palace, where (if it pleased him also) he had entertained to abide eight dayes together

from Sonne to Sonne, maintaining Iouſt and Combate a gainſt all commers, who ſhoulde come to ſhew their valours in protection of their Ladies: For that hee deſired to maintaine her who poſſeſſed his heart to be one more accompliſhed in vertues and graces correſpondent to her extreame beauty, than any other loued or ſerued of any Knight, except Philocriſta and Francheline, the two glorious Starres of their age.

This did hee eſtabliſh for a Lawe of the Combate, that all knights vanquiſhed by him, ſhould leaue their coats of Armes behinde them hanged vpon a piller, which he cauſed to be erected at the ende of the Liſts, hoping to carry them with him away into Fraunce, if ſo it fortuned that hee ſtaid out his eight dayes iourney without giuing ouer his enterpriſe: Contrariwiſe he would leaue his to his vanquiſher, who could holde out the reſt of the preſtired time vnder the honour and defence of the Lady whom he ſerued.

The Emperour who heard the County talke thus manfully, was in ſo profound a thought: calling to minde the happy time that he purchaſed ſo much renown in trauerſing the Celtique & Belgicke Gaule, that he ſhewed outwardly ſome apparent token of gladnes: and ſeeming to be in the Countelle thoughts, and to feele the ſame pleaſure which he receiued, remembring the perfections of his Lady, anſwered him merrily in this ſort.

My Lorde, I foreſee well the paine and trauell which will lie vppon your necke in this charge, and haiue much courage ſhe giueth you whom you loue ſo perfectly, that in her fauour you enterpriſe ſo knightly an exploit: Wherevppon I aſſure my ſelfe that beſide the praiſe which ſhall remaine vnto you, ſhee ſhall eſteeme you much more, conſidering the great hazard into which you expoſe your owne perſon: But that I may condiſcend vnto your requeſt (albeit I ſhould bee very ſorry, if I ſhoulde attrayde you any thing which might turne you to any hurt) I grant you freely to execute your enterpriſe therein, and in all other honeſt and laudable exerciſes

of Chiualry.

Gratious Lord replied the Countie, as long as my soule shall dwell in his passible bodie, I will alwaies endeuour in all places to manifest the praise of her merite, according to the small puissance that it hath pleased God to giue me, wholly vowed, yea fatally destinated to her seruice: & when my forces shall not answere my hart, which in this respect is incrypugnable: I shal augment onely but the number of these, who cannot bring their desires about, thanking you in all most humble affection, of the fauour which you shewed me, in giuing me such licence in your house.

After these speches and manie other which they had together, the Countie retired himselfe into his lodging: where as soone as he was come, he commaunded that on the morrowe they should plant in the place before the Pallace an inclosure which should haue in Diameter and circumference of the Center vnto the ends foure and twentie fathome in latitude, and eight and thirtie in longitude: which was done with high railes in so sufficient proportion, that fiue Knights might easily fight together afront, besides hee would haue a house made hard by, where he gaue order to set vp a Tent, a Webbe, a Kitchin with Offices, & al which was necessarie for so sumptuous a recreation. The next day at Sunne rising he armed himselfe at all points, and mounting vpon a double Courser, hee came to appeare within the lists, where were manie Knights disarmed to keepe him companie, whome he did bestie magnificently in the feast. The first man who ran within the lists was the Duke of Drante, vassall to the King of Thessalie, young in age, but lustie and verie skilfull in managing Armes, who loued with a singular affection a damsel his subiect, faire and marueilous gracious, who finding the doore of the Tilt shutte, thrust it open with the great end of his Launce to enter in: therefore soone mounted the Earle on horsebacke, and taking his sworde in his hand remaunded the Duke whether hee would Iouste or Combat with him.

I will haue but the Iouste quoth the Duke, for that I thinke quicklie to make you confesse her whome I loue, to excell in beautie and god grace, the Ladie for whome you enterprise an exploit, which seemeth to passe your cunning.

It were a thing almost miraculous, replied the Earle, if with so great reason as I haue to make god mine enterprise, I should be vanquished by the first assaylant. Saying so they went to campe themselues at the two ends of this place, then comming violently to encounter, they shiuered both their Launces, and dashing one another with their shields they passed brauely the rest of the carriere: whereof the Earle was verie sorrie when he cried to his aduersarie: Knight take yet one staffe more; for the encounter of this first Iouste hauing beene so fauourable vnto you, I will see how you will behaue your selfe in the second: Then shall bee seene manifestlye the fault occasion I haue to Iouste, answered the Duke, taking another Launce, with the which comming courageouslye to charge him, he mist his blow in striking, which the Countie did not: but running aright carriere, sent him ouer his horse croupper with a tumbling cast downe to the ground: saying with a ioyfull courage; Art other time venter not with me in the lists, if you haue no better reason to combat.

To that the Duke answered him nothing; for hee founde himselfe ashamed to haue voyded the Arson before Francheline his soueraigne Ladie, and many other Lords and Knights, who beheld them through the Pallace windowes. But rising vp, he put off gently his Coate of Armes, and afterward being remounted he departed out of the Tilt-yeard, to goe whether it pleased God to conduct him: whereof Pastnendos had so great remorse, because of the vassalage which hee owed vnto the Father of his affianced Ladie, that with some apparance of reason, hee would haue entred the lists himselfe to haue reuenged him.

Afterwards there appeared nine or ten Knightes, from whome the Countie still carried away the honour and haubergions: So that about Sunne setting, when hee retired for

that

that day, he felt himselfe verie wearie and oueryressed with the burthen that he was faine to sustain: notwithstanding the teis which ranished his spirites more and more, made him forget the dolour and wearines of his members. Thether came Arnedes with all the French knightes, to feast him and to keepe him companie the greatest part of the night: where to stay our selues no longer, the Earle continued six whole dates before he was vanquished of anie, doing marueils of Armes, as well at the Iouste, as at the Combat at the sword, & making great cheare and banquetes to those who visited him: whereof the Emperour mernailed much, no lesse of his prowesse and valour, than of his magnificence and sumptuositie, which hee continued vntil the seauenth day following, when there came thither two knightes, one whereof toke aware within few houres from the Earle, all the honour hee had wonne in the former dayes, as you shall presently heare.

CHAP. VII.

How *Belcar*, *Recindes* and *Tyrendos*, being departed from *Constantinople* passed by the Duchy of *Bort*, where *Tyrendos* vanquished at the Iousts, the Knight who kept a passage out of the Cittie for the loue of the Ducheſſe, and what fell out afterward vpon this occasion.

WEE declared a while since how Belcar, Recindes and Tyrendos departed vnknowne from Macedon to go to Constantinople, and riding great iournies passed by the Duchy of Bort, whereof was Lord an aged and grayheaded father, who in his youthfull yeares loued rest and his delights, better than the Courtlie life, or any militarie exercise.

He had two faire Daughters, and one Sonne esteemed a verie valiant knight, who against his Fathers will was gone to Constantinople: and at his second marriage, did this olduian take to wife a verie yong Ladie exceeding his daugh-

ters in beautie, wherevpon a riche gentle knight called Dirdan was much enamoured, before and after the Duke had taken hir to wife. By meanes wherof knowing there was no better nor more expedient remedie to see her and speake often with her, he contracted great amitie with the Duke her husband, giuing him to vnderstand he wold be verie glad to espouse his youngest daughter comming once to age, if hee might please to bestow her on him in mariage.

The Duke who smelt his subtilty a little, would haue willingly debarred him from his house, had it not bin for the scandall which he feared: and on the other side the Duchesse (who being put to choice would not refuse the yong and vigorous Champion to take an old and decrepit man to her husband) seeing him so passionate as he was, albeit she being married before, could no lesse gratefie him, but must by iust and reasonable guerdon, loue him againe with the like; which nevertheless shee dissembled, bidding him manie times not to torment him selfe for her, and not to feede his haire hope, which in the ende would deceaue him, for it would not haue so good successe as he expected.

Notwithstanding shee could neuer dissuade him from his purpose, but resting to the auncient Proverbe which saith thus, (All paine deserueth recompence,) resolued him self that if not verie quickly, yet at the length hee might gather some fruite of his sweet Ladie, which did not frustrate him by some coniecture which he had some after: for that hee hearing her say shee would goe willingly to see the Triumphs which were to be held at the mariage of Philocasta at Constantinople, he purposed to shew her some passtime, to the ende to dissuade her from that affection: and to this end complotted with a Brother and cosen Germaine of his, to gard a passage in the fields before the Citty where the Duke was resident aliuted.

This Dirdan thereby hauing vpon this occasion obtained licence of him, who at the instant prayers of his two daughters, sometime did walke into the plaine, began to defend the passage: wherein he gat honor becoming a good knight, seeing

him

himselfe before her, who augmented the powers of his body by the one halfe: whose iudgement in his fauour, he esteemed more than that of all the rest of the spectators, who held all no other than a good opinion of his prowes, so that he loued him more than before.

But Belcar and his companions passing by the Cittie of this Duke, knowing nothing of the Ioust, Tyrendos who rode before the other somewhat pensiue, looked not about till he saw a Squier vere nere him, who began to charge him that he should not passe anie further. Wherefore quoth Tyrendos?

For that replyed hee, if you goe on still forward, you must Ioust against a knight, who will easilie lay you along from your horse, so that by this meane you shall be forced to leaue him behinde, because here is established such a law, and when peraduenture you should dismount him, yet must you encounter two other hardie knights, therefore you shall put your selfe into great danger.

For all this quoth Tyrendos, I will not ride a steppe out of my way: and hasting on he saw the Tents of the knight, & also of the Duke, who was in them with his wife and his daughters, to see the Ioust that day.

Dirdan who saw him come a farre off, stood still minding to giue him the shock and the hommado, and when hee perceiued him to be nere he called vnto him. Yo knight, seeing you will passe here, you must Ioust with me: for vppon such paine hope I this Traft.

Seigneur defendant answered Tyrendos, nothing but the desire I had to breake a launce with you, caused me to passe this way. Saying as he had said, they came so violently togeather that Dirdan breaking his staff in a thousand shiuers, and giuing the assallant a little wound, to the ground fell the Traft, where by the grieuous and lowdish fall hee had, hee found himselfe touched with his harneste: By reason whereof Tyrendos taking his horse by the Bridle, saide be-

This

This horse appertaineth to me by reason of his encounter, those who were present much marueiled, principally the brother of Dirdan, who chasing monstrously taide as hee was mounting his horse: Knight thinke not to haue done, for you must Iouste with me, who will make you pay dearely for the mistaking of my brother.

Well may you replied Tyrendos seeke the same, if it please the diuine bountie but to fauour mee. As he had done this speech hee gaue into Belcars hand the horse of the vanquished Knight, who arriued thether during their alteration, marueilous apaide seeing his companion behaue him selfe like a valiant and hardie Knight.

Then running one at another with a right carriere, Tyrendos sent his Aliatant topsturuie with a vengeance ouer his horse taile, whose staffe by mishap ranne into his horse head: whereby he presently died betweene his legges, which constrayned Tyrendos to leape straite out of the saddle, to mount vp with a trice vppon him which Belcar held by the bridle, which the brother of the two vanquished Knights seeing, ran furiously vpon him to charge him in a great rage, saying they would die in the place, or bee reuenged of them for this misfortune: but it was not long before hee went to keepe them companie vpon the greene grasse, which was died red with their owne blood in manie places: This made the Duchesse then call to minde the Metamorphosis of Hyacinthus, (Reacindes and Belcar to retaine great top in their spirits.

Tyrendos then sent by a Page the two Horses of the vanquished, to the Duke, who was marueilous glad of the Honour that Dirdan lost in the Iouste: and the Knight who had vanquisht him seeming to him no lesse courteous and humane than valerous and magnanimious, hee rose out of his Chaire to entertaine him and his companions, inuiting them to refresh themselues in his house. By meanes whereof when the Duke, Duchesse and all the rest were mounted on Horseback they rode straite to the Castell, where the Duke commaunded that the Knights were quickly disarmed, and his

that they should with all spede vpelle Tyrendos wounde, to whome euerie one did great honour: for albeit they knewe his companions to be verie vertuous, beautifull, and better proportioned of their persons, yet for some respect, they did esteeme and presume more of Tyrendos.

Then supper time approching, the Duke commanded they should couer in a pleasant and delicious garden which ioyned hard to the Castell, where they were verie honourably serued with diuers dishes, of most exquisite and rare viandes: and after the repast was taken, the Duchesse with her daughters came in singing and playing vpon Harps, Viols and Lutes, with so excellent a grace, that to heare the sweet harmonie which resounded as well from their coyall mouthes, as their cunning touchings with their white and delicate hands, playing vpon those lerical instruments, the Assistantes thought them selues in the Elisian fieldes amonge the nine Muses, Apollo and all the rest of the musicall consort.

The knights surely take great recreation and pleasure, surpassing almost the capacitie of their spirites, in the which if the handes and mouth of the Duchesse were occupied to make such melodie, their eyes did no lesse emit their office to beholde Tyrendos, and by that they had well beheld and admired him, at that instant was there a sodaine change made within her hart of the lone which she bare to Dirdan, with that which Cupido presented her purpetted on the behalfe of Tyrendos.

And as she well sawe how shee persecuered a great while in this contemplation, (the excellence and singularity of her graces pleasing him verie much on the other side) was as prompt as she to giue audience to this bargaine of dyuinage.

During the accomplishment whereof, the Duke reasoning of many things with Belcar, demaunding him in the end who Tyrendos was, perceauing nothing the priuie wounde hee had already made in the hart of his wife. [illegible] are worthy the Empire of the realme of Macedon. Apart [illegible] vnto whom loyalty is [illegible] Constantinople.

I beleeue replied the Duke, in all the assembly which shall bee seene, there will bee found fewe men at Armes which can come neere this, for as much as I can praise, by the proofe I haue seene him make to day. You say true quoth Belcar, and yet you would say more if you knewe who he is. The Duchesse who making no semblance, heard all these discourses passe, imagined presently Tyrendos must bee some Knight of great and illustrious blood, therefore shee made greater account of him than before, being thrice happie to haue changed Dirdan for him, whome shee loued already so ardently that before they parted company, shee whispered unto him verie softly these wordes, so that no body heard her: Faire Knight you must repaire the sorrow and griefe you haue procured vs in vanquishing these Knights of our countrie, whom we must esteeme of. God forbid replyed Tyrendos, I should be borne into this worlde, to worke you faire Lady the least sparke of displeasure and miscontentment that any braue spirite may lightly receaue: Neuerthelesse if the Planets haue so much disanoyed me, that I haue given you any cause to be sad, I beseech you Madame, to appoint me any penaunce as you shall know may suffice to blot out this offence, which against my will and before I was aware I haue committed thereby: then saide the Duchesse, I beseeme beleeue you will not faile to accomplish that which your hart commaunds you to speake, the generousnes whereof I know already, & I pardon as willingly this ouersight, as I hope you will accomplish hereafter the liberall offer you make me, to amende it according to my discretion. I thanke you most humbly quoth he then, to graunt me so quickly pardon in so great a misdeede as to prouoke the choller of Ladies, which shall cause me to say euer hereafter, to haue found in you curtesie and humanitie, surmounting the forces of my tongue: In recompence whereof assure your selfe Madame, in all occasions presented to me for your seruice, I will employ my selfe with such sincerities of deuotion, as I desire to be made knowen vnto you when it shall please you to giue me full fruition of that felicitie,

which I shall repute seruice to no other, in receyuing mee to your Knight: so much I neuer offered yet to any Lady liuing, for that I acknowledge my selfe farre vnworthie to serue any Ladie.

If so it be replied the Duchesse, I may well glorie to haue made this day so precious and inestimable a purchase, gayning him for my Knight, who is a verie pearle at the reputation of Mars: wherein I finde my selfe so much beholding vnto you, that I see my selfe out of all hope to be euer able to cancell towards you the Obligation of my spirite: if of your fauour and grace it do not please you to accept in part of payment and satisfaction therof, the extreame desire which I haue to shewe you in effect, I leaue you euen as the same taste which giueth mee comfort and good hope that you shall reape condigne recompence for the paines you offer to endure for my sake.

These last wordes she spake so softly that none but he could heare them, and so faire and softly prosecuting their matter, Tirendos told her that his heart would be verie well content, if any accident did fall out to constraine him to make some abode to doe her humble seruice there.

What would he answered his louer, the most agreable thing which I could desire: so that I beseech you depart not hence yet these two dayes, during which time peraduenture some opportunity may serue to bring about this businesse.

Tirendos promised her would (when the Duke praise them altogether, because hee was come in talke to the same point with the others) they would not depart on the morrow: whereunto they consented, to the great contentment of the Duchesse, who shewed by all signes that could deuise, to make him know the extreame loue she bare Tyrendos.

And as she entred her selfe the day following, to deuise some inuention to colour the sojourning of her louer, behold there entred into the Pallace a woman attyred in blacke, who demanded of the Duke if the knight vanquisher of Dardan and his companions, were in his house; who being shewed

vnto him, she fell prostrate at his feete, praying and conjuring him by the thing which he loued best in this world, that hee would graunt her one boone.

The Knight hauing accorded this womans request, she began againe after humble thankes to say in this manner.

Faire Knight you haue now promised to goe into a place with mee, where I hope by meanes of your valour and prowesse (whose fame yesternight came vnto my eares) to finde mee remedie for a wrong, which the worst of all Knightes caused me wickedly these last dayes to endure. Tyrendos promised her againe to employ himselfe for her, so that she should remaine content: and seeing he must yet haue another Combat in that quarter, he likey verie well his occurrence, which was a meane for him to stay longer nere his deare Spitrelle, who thereupon was almost rauished for ioy: but if they two were well pleased, Belcar and Recindes, who would not sojourne there anie longer, (to the end they might come before the King Florendos to Constantinople,) were as much displeased when they vnderstood of the iniured Gentlewoman, that Tyrendos must needes abide about ten or twelue daies in that place. Wherefore hee praied them to be going alwaies before, saying that he must needs stay there to exploit some act which might make more famous the reputation of his person: Assuring them hee would not be long after them, & that the great desire which hee had to be at the Triumph would keepe him from sojourning long in any other place. His companions seeing they could not get him along, thanked the Duke & the Duchesse for the good vsage & honorable entertainment they had made them, & leauing Tyrendos in Bore, (being a little displeased to seperate their Trinity) they take their iourney strait to Constantinople: whereby the Duke was marueylous glad of this Knights abode with him, misdoubting nothing that he would lie in ambush for his wifes honor: who hoping to take some pastime in the amorous chace with her new Paramour, made a great deale the better cheare to the Gentlewoman, who was cause to retayne him with her

where wee will leaue them to the liuing of their loues, to recount what befortuned Belcar and Recindes after they had parted company.

CHAP. VIII.

How *Belcar* and *Recindes* being arriued in *Constantinople* vnknowne of any, vanquished the County *Peter*, and continued the lawe of his Iouſt, dooing maruels of Armes: and how the Emperour ſent *Palmendos* and *Primaleon* to know who they were.

Elcar and Recindes perceiuing the will of Tirendes their companion, prayed God to preſerue him from all ſinniſter accident, then bidding him adieu, they fell into their way againe: wherein riding many dayes iourneys, they arriued at the laſt in Conſtantinople on a Sunday morning, the ſeauenth day of the Iouſt that County Peter enterpriſed (as you may call to minde) whereof they heard ſome newes by the way as they came. By meanes whereof they determined before they would make themſelues knowne, to proue themſelues againſt him as knights errant: Belcar praid his companion to let him haue the firſt courſe, which hee willingly graunted, albeit hee could haue deſired to win the honour of haue firſt himſelfe.

Entring then into the Citty, they rode directly to the Mill-yeard, where they found the gate ſhut, by reaſon the County dined then in the company of many knights with great ioy and ſollace, as they were accuſtomed within his Pauilion: So that being faint to ſtay the fit houre, they leaned vpon their Launces, vntill they ſaine the Emperour take his place on the left hande, to whome the King of Hungarie who ſate at his ſide begins to ſay: My Lord, behold those two knights who will Iouſt, how braue they gouerne themſelues on horſe-backe.

Truly brother you say well (quoth hee) I beleeue it will do a man good to see them at the shocke. When Belcar perceiued the Emperour whom he had not seene long time before, feare and courage increased so in his heart, that hee purposed to shew this day some pleasure in his house, where because he was neurished and brought vp in it from his infancy, he knew not King Frisol his father who was with him in company, being brought from Hungarie thither in his swadling clouts.

But the Earle seeing the Seigniory & Noblesse in the galleries, caused forthwith his Helmet to be brought, and by and by all his strings, leathers and buckles, to be laced and tyed: Then mounting he commaunded the Trumpets and Drums to sound, and to open the Gate of his repaire: Belcar into Belcar being first entred, the Earle asked him, whether he would Iouste or fight, I will quoth the Assailant, for all that I shall know to be necessary, but let us first Iouste to see what will follow.

Hauing thus saluted each other, they encountred with such a fury that Belcar lost his stirrups, and the Earle (breaking in, dashing together the pertrail and the girths of his horse) went maugre his nose to kisse his great grandmother, but he soone got vp again, being greatly ashamed and vexed, to whom in an instant the honour he had conquered in five dayes.

Sir Knight then quoth Belcar, I haue summe your Coate of Armes, if I be not giuen to misunderstand in declaring me the Lawes of your enterprise: According to which you must depart this field, which I purpose to garde and defend in my turne as you haue done before me, if feare keep disappointe me not by force of Armes. My habiliaments shall I well giue you (answered the Countie) without departing the Field, if I be not by Martiall exploits performed by you or some other, which shall force me to do it. You will seeke your deuantage, replied Belcar, neuertheless, seeing you will auenge your remount hardly, and con me thanke for the courtesie and good which I shew you.

Then

Thenset the Earle late to stirrup againe, and in the meane time the Emperour being greatly astonished at the magnanimity of this knight, said to the King of Hungarie, he well knew who he was; the two Champions began with their swords a terrible and furious skirmish, being one another in so wyld and strange manner, that it terrified the beholders to heare them onely: For the Counte through rage and despite which surmounted his reason, laid on without feare, & most desperately.

But his adversary, who was a little more nimble, and could manage a little better than he, did tuggle his robes with such sound flashes which easily tainted him at length, so that being weary to make him languish so much, he hitt him in the ende a fell stroake vppon his spurrion, which made him to stonny vpon the bare ground, saying: How knight must you confesse me by force, to that which vnto you would not accord by your god will: a thing surely proceeding from your rash presumption, which make you thinke the honour of Thessaly dwelt only by arming Frenchmen.

At this spectacle and words fumeth the Prince Arnodes, and had it not beene through the interposition of his person, and that Philocrista vnder more paine prohibited it, hee had endosse his Armes to reuenge the Country and his Nation of this reproach.

In the same paine and choller were all the rest of the French Nobility who seeing they could haue none other reuenge, killed vp Emile Peter from his fall, and bare him into his lodging to cause the Surgeons to take vnto him, and search his wounds.

Polycar who thought in the prime time what he had to do, take the coate of Armes, and giuing it to one of his Pages, commanded him to beare it from thence forward of his complations to Melisia the King of Hungaries Daughter: whom they had soone presented vnto all commers, & there he could behaue himselfe so much honour, as to let them Combat vnder his Deuice.

Eng

And gaue charge moze-ouer to the young-man, to tell the Emperour and those who were about his Maiestie, that who soeuer would Tourney against him, should alwaies finde him ready within the Lices: Where if peraduenture hee were vanquished by any of the Assailants, the field should remaine to his companion, who should second him therein, which they did desire to do in attending the opening of the generall Triumph.

The Page vnderstanding throughly his Maisters will, went strait to the Pallace, where kneeling before the Empresse, hee besought her to shewe him which of her Ladies was Melissa, King Frisols Daughter: wherein beeing by her graciously certified, the youth rose vp, and with a most lowly reuerence began to say in this manner.

Madame Melissa, the Knight who vanquished Earle Conbi kisseth the hand of your Excellencie, and sendeth you by me this his Spaile, the which hee kindweth beseeming your worthines, whom he loueth more than any Lady of this company: And although he neuer saw you, hee assureth himselfe neuertheless, that for whose loue the French Lord fought, is not so perfect in beauty, but she yeeldeth and giueth the first place vnto you. Aduertising your moze-ouer, that he and his companion remaine from this present houre, your most humble and obedient Knights, as hoping (if it please you to do them so much honour) that they may accomplish the Laine of the Iouft of County Peter vnder your name) to employ themselues so in this place, that the renowne of your beauty shall flie throughout all climates of the Leuant.

Hee that had there seene the comely beauty of Melissa, should not haue failed to haue iudged of the fauour of her two Alabaster cheekes, couered with a transparent and fine Lawne, for the shame that scared her, hearing him speake so in her fauour: But could she not were a wonder to the young-man; shee founde her selfe so confounded; whom the King her father (who thereby with his Company) interpreting this Embassage in good part, said vnto her; Daughter I am

not

not beléeue but the Seigneur who sendeth you such a present knoweth you; and though it were for no other respect, at least you ought to receiue it, and to honour him who sendeth it you for loue of his generous minde.

I know not my Lorde (quoth Melissa then) who may bee the Knight, whose curtesie seemeth not to approch his force; taking this hardiesse to giue a present to a Damsell whom he knoweth not: which notwithstanding, for that it is your pleasure I will accept of it.

You shall aduertize your Master (quoth shee to the Page) he greatly mistaketh to presume so much of my beauty, as to continue the Ioust of the Earle for mee, who haue deserued no such honour at his hand: Neuertheless, I thanke him for his good will, in recompence whereof, if I can do any thing for him, you shall assure him from mee, I will employ my selfe with as good will, as I pray God to preserue him and his companion also from all incumbrances which may impeach his valiant enterprise; for the small occasion they haue to charge so heauy a burthen for so little beauty as mine, makes me feare they will be vanquisht, if their prowesse and dexterity do not supply this default.

Then the young youth making a low obeysance to thanke her for this curteous answere, tooke his leaue gratiously of her: And turning to Duke Eustace who was nereft, besought him to tell the Emperour and his company, that who so euer had any desire to ioust against this Knight-vanquisher, and his companion, should appeare vpon the Barriers, where hee should finde them alwaies ready; which hee did without delay: The Emperour misdoubting one of these Knights to be Belear, told it incontinent to King Frisol, who assured him the contrary; for that he supposed hee had barely left the company of Florendos.

Now did Belear all that day nothing but breake Lances, for there was no French Knight but came to do his best against him, hoping euery one to reuenge the County Peter: but the like chaunce befell them, as did to him before, for this

Defendant was rough, and a very good horsemã, which was his inheritance he helde from king Frisol his father, who was esteemed one of the best men at Armes of his time. That same day Belcar dismounted beside the Frenchmen about twenty Knights the most redoubted of the Court: wherat the Emperour wondered much, so that he sent Primaleon to them to know who they were; who gladly did this Embassage with Palmendos; entreating them to repose that night in the Emperours Court, who gave them such charge, for the great desire he had to know them.

Gentlemen answered Belcar, desire his Highnesse to pardon vs this once, for that wee cannot leave this place without incurring some blame, beeing departed from our houses, with full determination to make our selues knowne to none.

This is a point of small curtesie (quoth the Constantino Politan) to refuse the honest offer which the Emperour maketh you, with so simple excuse as you finde now.

And who are you faire Syr, quoth Belcar, (fayning not to know him) who tearme vs discurteous?

I am Primaleon (replied he) Sonne to the Emperour, who sendeth to intreate you by me to do him this honour.

I haue done then (prosecuted the Defendant) because I knowe you haue not as yet received the order of Chiualry: Assuring you, that for your prayers, nor for the entreaties of the Emperour, shall you prevaile further with me than as I told you before.

I will not importune you any further (sayth the young Prince) then being some what offended, and when hee had so said, he returned into the Pallace with Palmendos, who was so wrath with this thwart answere, that hee purposed on the next morrow to Arme himselfe, to the ende to chastize his arrogance.

When the Emperour vnderstood they had disdained to graunt his request, hee did but laugh at it, saying; they must be let alone in their obstinacie, to see what might bee the issue. Neuertheless, Palmendos would be reuenged; and without saying

saying ought to any body, went secretly to endosse the Coat of Armes, in which he vanquished the Tourney, which we haue described before, and came withall with a great Launce in his hand within the Barriers.

¶ So soone as Recindes spide his Armour hee knewe it, and who carried it on his back; which he let his companion know, requesting him not to Joust against him for the Emperours sake: Whereunto Belcar answered, hee could willingly forbeare; notwithstanding he could not refuse so good occasion to proue his valour against so braue a Knight; for if he dismount me at the Joust, quoth hee, I shall not thinke it any shame or dishonour for mee, seeing hee is the Achilles of our age, with whose valerous exploits all the Orient resoundeth. When hee had done his speech, hee did his best endeuour to make himselfe his forces, and running one against the other very roughly, such was their encounter, that Belcar had taken measure of the earth, had he not taken hold of his horse-maine. And Palmendos liked not very wel the knocke which he gaue him, but it was needfull for them to breath a little. Their charging a fresh with new Launces (for that the first flew in pieces to their Gauntlets) they met together with so sodaine a fury, that they made the ground trembie vnder them, where Belcar found himselfe much troubled, what with the blow and the fall in his Armour. Then Palmendos who lost onely his stirrups, glad of this reuenge, demaunded his Vauburgeon, aduising him if he would not fight at the sharpe, to depart the field. Other battell quoth Belcar, seeke not I against thee, for small hope haue I to gaine more honour by the sword, than I haue already at the Joust: and for that also I esteeme and loue thee too well, to make further tryall against thee; knowing right well by this encounter, I should haue but ill sparde if I proceeded further. Palmendos hearing him say so, mitigated a good part of his indignation, and taking his Coate of Armes, went directly to the Pallace, where the Emperour & the King of Thessalie, very glad of this act, receiued him with great pleasure, the Emperour saying thus to him.

Sonne the Knight did wisely not to accept the Combat of the sharpe against you, otherwise he might haue sped ill, considering his successe at the Iouſt: Now God grant (I wish it with my hart) that all your future enterprises may sort to so good & honorable ende, as the passed haue receiued a most fortunate and fauourable issue.

Palmendos kissing his hands, thanked him humbly for this good wish, then sent hee Belcars Gabardine to his faire Francheline, who was not a little glad thereof: Therefore shee would néedes come to disarme him with her owne handes, casting about him a faire and rich mantle furd with white sables, for feare he should take cold.

CHAP. IX.

How *Recindes* continuing the Iouſt after *Belcar* vanquished the Marques of *Penerad*, and a Cosen of his, with many others after them: and howe the Prince *Arnedes* his Cosen Iousted against him, which caused the Emperour to come into the field to know who he was.

BElcar séeing Palmendos depart the Lists, rose vp very angry for his fall, to retire himselfe to the Earles Pauilion where Recindes was: who galled to the heart for his companions misfortune, purposing to reuenge him if any man appeared within the Barriers: So that being mounted he sticed lively vp and downe, when the Marquesse of Penerad, (esteemed a good Knight, as descending of the race of the Emperours of Constantinople) came into the field.

Hee hering aduertised, that the two Knights who kept the Iouſt after Earle Peter had sent his Coat to Meliſa, whom hee desired extreamely to haue in marriage, began to beare them a mortall and secrete grudge; and purposing to chastise them for their ouer bolde rashnes, came richly armed into the fielde, where without any word speaking, prouoked with raging anger, hailing his Launce, dasht his horse sodainely

Which

Which Recindes perceauing, set spurs quickly to his like-wise, so furious was their encounter, that the Marques went arse ouer head, ouer his horse head to kisse the ground, taking such a grieuous thulch, that he remayned in the place, wagging neyther hand nor foot: whereupō one of his cosens pro-per and valiant of his person, a beanie man at this accident (in the meane while they carried the Marques into his Chamber) ranne spedily to Arme himselfe, thinking to reuenge his mis-hap: Bimer was the Marques Cosen called, who begainne to Iouste in such a heat, that he mist his blow against Recindes, who contrariwise hit him so full pat, that he sent him easily to take the Marques place: but he rose vp againe lightly, saying to the Defendant, hee should not thinke to haue yet done with him, seeing he would know how he could handle his sharpe.

At these words the Spanish Prince alighted, and putting his shield on his Arme with a courageous stomach, they began a fierce combat, which for all that was quickly finished. For Recindes beeing a better warrier, and more spruce than his aduersarie, made him recoyle to the place where he was van-quished: then pulling off his Gabberdine, left him wounded in many places of his bodie among his people, who carried him thence into his Cosens lodging.

That done, he gaue that and the Marques coate to Belcars Page, to beare them to Melissa, beseeching her to accept them, as comming from one her most affectionate seruitour, that she might finde vnder the two tropicks of heauen.

She who was with Philocrita in her Chamber, when the Page came to doe the message, answered thus: I know not what these Knights meane to send mee such presents without knowing me: yet faine would I learne their names, & what moueth them to doe it: Madame (quoth the youth) they are such, that when you shall knowe them, you shall thinke some great good Fortune will befall you, in beeing able to doe them some honour for your part in recompence of the extreme de-sire that I can assure you they haue to serue you in the things wherein you take some pleasure: For all that they shal haue

none other thankes of mee replied the Princesse till I knowe more, well will I take that which they send me, where with I finde my selfe greatly content: albeit farre more should my spirits be satisfied, as you may tell them, if I might perceaue openly their visit. Few dayes shall passe Madame, quoth the youngman, before you se the true end of all: so that I beseech you doe not vexe your selfe, but attend the fitte honour which shall be vsed as I hope.

Finishing his speech, he take honestlie his conge of the Ladies, whome he left verie pensiue, and curious to knowe who these valiant and curteous knights might bee. In the meane time Recindes who held on his Chyualries, Iousted against ten or twelue Assailants: all whome hee laid brauely along, winning by this meane their Coats, which hee caused to bee hanged on high vpon the Piller, where Countie Peter hoped to erect his Trophie: After this he take his solace and recreation, before any one presented himselfe within the Lists, euerie one fearing to aduenture against him, whose prowesse and dexteritie was so great: Whereupon Arnedes who felt himselfe better at ease than he was wont, hearing the Emperour say the Defendant might well remaine with the honour of the Iouste, seeing that no man entred the field any more, answered him.

I doe not thinke my Lord, they cease venturing for feare of him, for the number of braue & hardie knightes of this Court is not so little that he can long time hold out against them, and as he had said, hee went presently to fit himselfe with Armes, putting on a Murrion well tempered with steele: then came he into the place mounted on a mightie Courser, who did nothing but neigh and fome at the mouth.

When Recindes saw him enter the Barriers, he discouered him some by his deuise, and as he thought howe to mainge Iousting with him, hee was forced to set spurres to his horse, because he saw his Cosen Arnedes do the like: nevertheless approaching within the reach of their Launces, he hauled his and would not couch it against him.

By

By this meane Arnedes eafily broke his ſtaffe, albeit hee could not wagge the Champion an inche out of the Saddle, ſo that in manner abaſhed to ſee him doe ſo, turning bitte hee incontinent charged vpon him thus: Sir knight let vs haue another bout yet, and vſe no more this curteſie towards him, who will con you no thanke for your fauour: So taketh hee another ſtaff and fetching his carriere to run the ſecond time, Recindes did as he had done before: Arnedes by that meanes or els by choller, miſſing his attainte, in a greate rage throwe his Launce to the ground, and ſetting courageouſly hand to his ſworde, ſaide to the knight: As God mee helpe notwe will I knowe for what reaſon you would not Iouſte againſt mee, as well as againſt the reſt.

That ſhall you neuer vnderſtand by my meanes quoth the Spaniard: hereof can I well aduertiſe you, that happen to mee what may, I will not couch my Launce againſt you.

You will tell mee then a reaſon quoth Arnedes, or you ſhall preſently die of my hand. Such inhumanitie ſhall I neuer ſée in you, replyed Recindes, albeit I had no will to defend my ſelfe.

By the liuing God ſaid Arnedes haſtily, you will conſtraine me to bée diſcourteous indéede, and therefore at your owne perill be it.

I can no longer forbeare quoth the Emperour then (who heard this controuerſie) but I muſt néedes knowe who are theſe two Knightes nowe in fielde: for me thinkes I ſée none other than the true repreſentation of Belcar and Recindes.

When he had thus ſaide, he deſcended with many Nobles after him, and finding the two Combattants yet in diſpute, the one ſeeking to knowe why his aduerſarie would not encounter him, the other excuſing himſelfe that hee might not tell the cauſe, willed Arnedes to goe aſide: And taking Recindes horſe by the bridle, hee prayed him of all loue that hee would ſatiſfie the great deſire hee had to knowe him.

My Lord quoth he, I cannot doe it without infringing my faith, therefore I pray you vrge mee not to be perturbe. Assure you, replyed the Emperour, you shall neuer see me depart from hence before I knowe and take you in the face: so that by excuses you may not preuaile.

Therefore I pray you put off your helmet, and thinke in so doing you shall not breake your faith and promise. For Gods sake, replied Recindes, do not offer to force me in your countries. This force will I offer you, answered the Emperour, for that in my mind, it staineth neither your honor nor mine. The knight in a perplexity not knowing what to say further, seeing it was a matter of constraint, held his peace and not a word. Then Belcar who had verie well heard all the whole circumstance (seeing hee could be no longer conceale himselfe, threw incontinent his helmet to the ground and went to fall on his knees before the Emperour, in kissing whole handes he saide.

My Lord pardon vs if it please you; if wee haue not been so prompt to obey you as your greatnes requires, for wee determined at our departure out of Macedon, to come vnknowne into this place, to explorate before your eyes some honourable attempt, wherein you might take some delight & pleasure: Notwithstanding seeing wee are frustrate of our intention, hauing performed nothing worthie to giue you contentment, it is the verie reason, why wee dissemble our selues vnto your Maiestie: of whom both the one and the other of vs two reputeth himselfe a most happie man, to haue receaued so great honour.

Ah my deare friends quoth the Emperour then, you be exceeding welcome into my Court, wherein I may well assure my selfe cannot be founde two knights, in whom can be found so much animosity as in you onely: but tell mee I pray you whether the King my most honourable Father, will come speedily vnto this Cittie.

My Lord answered Belcar, I am sure it will not be a weeke before he arriue here, For he was readie to depart, when I entreated

entreated him to let vs goe before, to bring you newes thereof. The Emperour maruelous ioyfull of this answere, turning himselfe with a laughing countenance towardes the King of Hungarie, saying to him: Brother receaue to you Belcar your Sonne, whose vertues and good manners make him so amiable, that euery braue man of good iudgment, wold be to him in stede of a Father in this behalfe.

As the Dominators of Greece spake these words, Belcar falling vppon his knees kissed honourably his Father King Frisols hand, who embraced him with great loue, the trickling teares standing in his eyes, and at length the French Prince seing his Cosen Recindes in face, ranne vnto him with open Armes to giue him the accollades, and could not almost speake for extreame gladnes, which seazed his heart in recognising him.

Which the Spaniard perceauing, alighted quickly from his horse to embrace him, and after they had shewed manie familiar & louing cherishings one to another, he went to doe his dutie to the Emperour, who receaued him most ioyfully, as did likewise all the Seigneurs and Barrons of the Court: whereof the greatest part esteemed themselues verie happie if they might come nere to offer them the gentle welcome: and if all the beholders were very glad of this sodaine and vnexpected ioy (whereof euerie one had a good share) that of Recindes was so abundant, that it could not be expressed: hauing seene him performe the valiant and famous acts, which you haue to fore vnderstood.

Then take the Emperour Recindes by the hande, and the King of Hungarie his Sonne Belcar, whome they lead straite to the Pallace, where being disarmed, they went honourably to kisse the Empresse hand, who entertayned them with most kinde speeches.

During which, Melissa who heard them (by the only instinct of the vnspeakeable ioy which she felt in mind, reflected in the superficies of her face, such a naturall beautie, that it was an admirable thing to behold.

Full well did the two knights marke it when they came to doe reuerence to Philocrista, Francheline, and to her who represented the third Goddesse. So that thinking her selfe thrice happie, to haue bin knowne worthie the presents of two worthy and excellent Princes, embraced many times her brother Belcar amiably: Neuertheleſſe with more than a singuler affection, and without any meane, (as it falleth out manie times to those who are striken with the same Dart that shee was) shee entertained Recindes her loyall and perfect louer. And beleeued firmely, by that which her Brother sent her, when the youngman brought her the first coate of Armes, that shee knewe indeede the whole discourse of their secretes: wherein she found great consolation, shewing oftentimes to her louer by many signes, gratious aspects, and other dumb Emballages of loue, what was her intention, which Recindes did the like for his part toward her.

In this meane time Belcar was buſie in beholding the extreame beautie of Francheline, whereof he was greatly astonished not without thinking Palmendos a moſt happie man, to haue won so much honour in winning her for his wife. And albeit hee was well contented with Alderine the onely Lady of his heart, yet hee could haue wished to haue had this for his Miſtreſſe, which passion could not be so well dissemble, but in embracing Palmendos hee muſt needes tell him in smiling manner: Truely Sir it was for my great good, I was not present at the bridge of Carderie when you arriued there, for obtayning nowe so easie victorie of me, what would you haue done when your heart was so much pricked forwarde to purchaſe so rich a treaſure as Francheline is? No marueile then if you haue shewed that prowesse vpon me which euerie man hath manifestly knowen in you, seeing before your eyes, a beautie sufficient to make able the moſt coward and faint harted knight that is, to performe any strange aduentures, were it neuer so hard and difficult.

My deare Coſen replied Palmendos, (being very glad to heare him selfe giuen this honeſt commendation by so good a Knight

knight as Belear,) you are as much bounden as my selfe to the Princesse Francheline, for seeing the desire to conquer her, caused you in the garde of the bridge to win the horo which shal for euer immortalize your fame: Where I was verie happy not to meete with you, auoyding great danger thereby of losing my life, which God hath preserued me hither to.

Further would they haue prosecuted these gratious speeches when Arnedes who approached with his Cosen, saide: Seigneurs leaue all these matters now, seeing that all men see the valour and dexteritie of you both, wherewith you Brother Palmendos do make many sicke through your beauie and puissant strokes: whereof I shall all my life beare good witnes, by that which hapned to me once, which I account no dishonour, seeing it hath pleased God to accomplish you in all Martiall perfection.

At these laudable reproches blushed Palmendos a little, when he answered them both in this manner: My Lords let vs not talke of things that are past among vs, when we knew not one another, albeit therby is clearely seene with what valour & Chiualry you were both endued & enriched: so dentling together of manis aduentures, they returned to the Emperour, who made them kinde entertainment, & likewise King Frisoll, being not able to satiate himselfe with the sight of his Sonne: So that the feast was much encreased by their arriuall in this Court; where we will leaue them, attending the comming of the King and Queene of Macedon (whome the Emperour vnderstod would bee there within foure dayes) to recount you what Tyrendos did in the Duke of Borts house.

CHAP. X.

How *Tyrendos* reuenged the Ladie clothed in black, who came into the Duke of *Borts* house, of an iniurie that was done her by a Knight named *Alegon*, and how by his meane the Duchesse and *Tyrendos* attayned to their hearts desire.

THe Knight Tyrendos desiring with an incredible affection to doe some pleasurable seruice to the Dutchesse of Bort, made tarriance with all his heart in her Castel, hoping to bring quickly some end to his amorous passions: During which he declared once more to her, how since his first arrival in the plaine, he was so enflamed with her loue that he pretended neuer to forsake her, whereof shee was a meruailous glad woman, & much more when her mansselled vnto her his race.

By meanes whereof making more account of him than she did before, they determined togethet to giue some solace to their desires, after he had accomplished the promise which he made to the Damosell clothed in blacke, so that to dispatche quickly he departed thence a loyal man on the next morning, not without the great intreatie of the Duke to repaire by his house if his way did lye any thing that way.

In the meane time the Dutchesse gaue one or two presents to the Damosell, and discouering vnto her the loue which she bare Tirendos, desired her to be carefull of his health: and that she would requite it, which the good Lady promised her frankly: so that taking her leaue of her and her husband, shee went her way with the Knight, who demaunding her after warde, wherin she had need of his aide, she answered him thus.

Know faire Knight that two of my Sons being this other day at the mariage of a sister of a naughty Knight called Alegon, they got there so great honor in a fortresse that the Burgraue & many others defended against all others, that the wife of Alegon (some little kin vnto them) did cherish them the more

for that, especially the elder, who was a spruce youth & well experienced in feats of war: For this occasion her trapterous husband conceiued in his minde a deadly grudge against him, which encreasing more and more, at one time among all other, when he espied him deuising with his wife, he fell into a furious choller, that without any word speaking, he came vpon him with his naked sword and slew him easily: My one sonne beeing disarmed and taken at vnawares: And afterwards running vppon my other sonne with his Catchpooles, put him incontinent into prison for feare lest he should reuenge the death of his brother; saying further, he would put him to some cruell death within the prison. But I sorrowfull and heauy Widdowe, voyde of kinred and friends, who may for me dem aund Justice for this iniury done; hearing the fame of your Prowesse, built some hope to be reuenged by your meau, being as assured as I am to dye, my sonnes were innocent, and iniured without any reason; and therefore would I most humbly pray you faire Syr, according to the promise you made me, to goe bid him defiance in his Castell, telling him if he refuse the Combat you will accuse him of treason before the Emperour. If such be (quoth Tyrendos) the disaster and misaduenture of your children, as you tell me; the homicide it selfe crieth vengeance against the trapterous and fellon murtherer, who hath perpetrated it; which I hope by Gods aide to make him confesse, promising you to employ my best forces therein, with such a courage, that I will either dye or els you shall remaine satisfied.

The Damsell gaue him great thanks for his good will, and taking two Squiers for guide and company in his lodging, they arriued the third day after about five a cloche before the Castell of Alegon: Where Tirendos had the Porter certifie his Master, there was come thither a Knight from the Emperour Palmerins Court, who would speake with him.

Whereof the Seigneur beeing aduertized, stept to a window ouer the Castle gate, demaunding what was his errant, I would willingly desire you (answered Tirendos) to increase

the inhumanity which you vse toward a poore widdow, restoring her youngest sonne to her, whom you detaine in prison vniustly: and if you will so doe, I promise to obtaine you pardon for the death of her eldest, whome you slewe against all right and reason, otherwise I denounce you the Combat, saying that you haue wronged your honour.

Truely I had not thought replyed Alegon that at the perswasion of a woman who complaineth without anie cause, a knight had beene so credulous, whom I may suspect of cowardize: assuring you that I haue done, but what I ought in reason to doe towards her Children, who sought to dishonour mee: so that I thinke you will gaine more to be gone againe vnto the Emperours Court, where you shall finde opportunitie at this present to shew your prowesse, and to haue your bellie full, rather than to enterprise here any thing, which might peraduenture cost you deare.

With that hee got him from the window ouer his portall, when Tyrendos in a marueilous rage, began to speake many haynous villanies to him, reprouching his cowardlinesse, and assuring him (if he would not Combat against him) to accuse him of felonie before the Emperour soueraigne Seigneur.

Which being well waied by Alegon, was somewhat affraide, & perswading himselfe it were better to ende that quarrell there than before the Emperour, resolued to sally out to Combat him: which hee did after hee had well harnessed himselfe with Armes, and a good Courser, telling his enemie hee made little estéeme of his braues, were hee the most redoubted knight of the Emperour Palmerius Court. Vpon this contention they comming to encounter with a marueylous furie, Alegon miss his blowe, but Tyrendos pearcing his shield and his cuyrace, thrust the pointe of his Launce so far into his breast, that he ouerturned him shrewdly wounded to the ground, whence the wretch could not so soone rise vp againe, but Tyrendos (who leapt nimbly from his horse) was at his backe to cut a two quickly the laces of his helmet: then setting the point of his sword at his throat, saide: Thou

art

art dead Alegon, if thou canſeſt not preſently come hether the Knight with his Armes and Horſe, which thou holdeſt wrongfully in priſon: Gentle Knight cried the vanquiſhed, for Gods ſake ſaue my life and I will obey you willingly in what ſoeuer your pleaſure is. Then he commaunded his people to fetch the priſoner quickly with all his militarie equipage, ſo that the Gayler hauing ſet him at libertie, it was not longe before he appeared in the place, whereof Tyrendos was glad without meaſure, when he aſked him whether her were him, for whome he had Combated: I am the man quoth he, who will ſerue you as long as my ſoule ſhall dwell within my body, which you haue ſo well releeued now: And as hee had ſaid, Tyrendos put vp his ſword into his ſheath, then mounting all three to horſe, he ſaid to Velican (ſo was the reſcued Knight named) theſe wordes.

Let vs nowe Brother depart this place, where I beleeue this falſe and cruell Tyrant will not commit hereafter, ſo many miſchéefes as he hath done heretofore, which was moſt true: for his ſeruants hauing brought him home to his chamber, and diſarmed to viſite him, they founde his wound ſo great and dangerous, that he liued but three daies afterward, and in the meane time Tyrendos, Velican, and his Mother, arriued in her Caſtell, which was a delight full and pleaſant houſe, within tenne mile of the Cittie where the Ducheſſe of Bort dwelled.

But this Damſell ſhewed ſuch kinde of cherriſhing to her Sonne, that it were impoſſible to write them, thanking many times the Knight who had reſcued him: who hauing his ſpirites occupied in nothing but vppon the Ducheſſe, toke this Damſell a parte to diſcouer likewiſe to her his paſſion, praying her to goe make his excuſe to the Duke, if hee could not returne vnto his houſe as her promiſed him at his departure: for that vppon ſome ſodaine newes which were brought him, he was faine to make in all haſte a voiage to Conſtantinople.

Whereuer,

Morcover prayed her to talke secretely with his wife, to knowe her intention concerning the conference betweene them in taking their plot touching the future accident of this occurrence, and that in any wise hee would stay for her answere in that place where he would solace himselfe vntill shee should do him that fauour.

The Damosell assured him to employ her selfe in this so dangerous a message, albeit she were certaine to lose her life, finding her selfe so much bounden and beholding to him, to refuse any thing which he would command or desire: by meanes whereof, taking her sonne with her, they went straight to the Dukes house, who entertained them very amiably, enquiring himselfe what was become of the Knight and of the issue of his promise: The which Velican told him from point to point: and after that which Tirendos would haue saide from him, whereat the good Seigneur was not a little displeased, for hee would willingly haue seene him yet once more in his Castle, as being the man whom hee esteemed more than any other Knight of the Countries adioyning to his Duchy.

But the Lady and her sonne admitting him, that they resolued from thenceforth to liue vnder the protection of his seruice, for the little assurance they had else-where, because of Alegons kindred, whom they feared as death.

The Duke ioyfully welcommed the Knight Velican, and the Duchesse entertained his mother for one of her Ladies of honour: and had a singular pleasure in hearing her recount how Tirendos her loyall Louer vanquished so easily Alegon the murtherer.

When the Damsell afterward spied a fit time for their purpose, she imparted to her the principall point of her secrete Embassage: Whereupon the Duchesse (who loued him as her owne soule) beganne to make this sodaine answere: Alas deare sister, the great valour and prowesse of Tirendos maketh me commit this errour, against the Duke my husband; for since I first sawe him, my heart felt it selfe wounded and inflamed with his loue, that it is impossible for me

me to endure any longer in this ardent flame, which hath almost tried me up, and no good hanor in me.

Madame quoth the Damosell, it was well for me of you to fire your amorous flame upon so brame a knight, of whom I can well assure you, for the small time I have frequented him, in a better place could you not have bestowed it: and surelie the Seigneur Tyrendos merriteth such recompacation, were it but for the extreame desire he hath to make you know how his devotion towards you, surpasseth that of the most affectionate seruitor of Cupid. So cunningly knewe the Damosell to vse her eloquence, with the good will that the Duchesse bore the knight: that talking from one matter to another, they concluded to come as it was night, Velican should goe secretly to fetch and conuoie him to the doze of a Garden which opened full upon the Duchesse lodging, by which way hee might easilie enter into her Chamber, and remaine there hidden as long as they thought good: For that the Duchesse had two or three faire Cabinets, into which neuer any entred but herselfe: to our behoof he made account to kepe Tyrendos as long as he could.

This determination quickly fosted to effect, for Tyrendos pricked forward with such desire as euery one may gesse, came an houre before day to the Garden doze, where attended for him the Damosell, who conueyed him afterwards into the chamber of the Duchesse, whom hee kist many times louingly as soone as he was arrived saying: Now can I say I have attayned the height of the bliss, which loue prepareth for his fauourites, and I cannot imagine Madame, how I may euer recompence the curtesie and fauour you shew me, in receiuing me for your seruant: If it be not to offer you the sincere and incorruptible affection that I have to continue your perpetuall slaue.

Ten thousand thankes for your good will, answered the Duchesse: nenertheless if you be not a poze and simple louer forget so much her chastitie, as to defile her marriage bed. I beseech you not to attribute the fault vnto me vnforuiate and re-

solute woman, but referre the whole vnto your beauty, prowesse and valour, which hath brought me into such a taking, that no reason being able to preuaile ouer the flaming desire of my heart, which you infused into mee when I gaue you mine, I am constrayned to abandon mine honour vnto you. Wherein I cannot but meruaile to finde my selfe so quicklie ouer taken with your loue, (regarding the small time I haue this burning passion in my breast,) for to make you knowe the wight, you see presently howe I haue feared nothing which may staine the reputation of a Lady Illustrious and of great renowne.

The Duchesse persevering in these her curteous Ceremonies, the Damosell began to cut her off thus: Madame, it is nowe time to bring into some harboure the two Barkes so tossed with the amorous storme and tempest: So that to preache is not nowe required in this place, rather let the Pilots thereof alone to doe the deuoire of their office.

By this meanes Tirendos hauing well vnderstoode the watch worde, set vp the Mast with one hande, and lifted vp the Sayles with the other, then laying downe his Armes of steele required in mortall battells, hee helped himselfe with those which are more esteemed betweene two Courtaines, couching himselfe nere the Duchesse side: where take some end the anguish of two Louers, who remaynes in that manner, vntill they thought it high time to giue order for the rest of their Naulgation, a Chamber was appointed for the Knight in a secret corner.

Where hee solourned nine or tenne dayes in the greatest pleasure and contentment, that as yet hee ever tasted in his life, for the Duchesse who loued him as dearely as her owne life, was faire and gratious in perfection: in such sorte that the departure and discontinuing of this felicitie, and pleasure, was a most grieuous thing to both these vassals of Loue.

For fearing lest at length this secrete mistery would bee vil-

discouered, the knight muſt needes go out of his ſweet and voluntarie Priſon: albeit the Ducheſſe did not much feare her old and gray-headed Husband: who may be an example to all other, (that euery one ſhould ſeeke his match) leſt the other inconuenient happen.

But Tyrendos in taking leaue of his Lady, promiſed vndoubtedly to ſee her againe, which comforted her a little: and afterward in going out of the Garden, hee was met by Dirdan, who loued the Ladie as you haue before vnderſtood, could by no meanes reſt or ſleepe, but walking all night long about her lodging to bee within ſent of his Paramour, in meane while to allay (as he thought) the rigrities of his burning feuer.

Hee ſeeing Tyrendos ſally forth of the Orchard, was vexed to the gall, as euerie one who hath taſted the bitter fruite of iealouſie may preſume: inſomuch that to knowe who hee might be, he drew neare, raging, and grumming betweene his teeth theſe wordes: Ah, accurſed death maiſt thou die who commeſt nowe from the place, the iſſue from whence hath wounded & peirced my heart in twaine: with that he would haue laide hande on his choller to ſtay him: but Tyrendos who had at the inſtant ſet hand to his ſworde reached him a blow vpon his corcombe, which cleft him downe to the ſhoulders, continuing his purpoſe thus: Now ſhal the martyrdome end, which hath hetherto tormented thee for her, whoſe ſhoole thou waſt vnworthie to kiſſe.

Then making haſt to the place where Velican attended him, hee mounted ſtrait, and without any other company but this knight, who would neuer leaue him, went directlye to Conſtantinople, where they arriued in good time for the Turney.

On the morrow morning was Dirdan found dead hard at the Gardendore, whereat was great murmuring, the people ſaying hee was ſlaine for loue of the Ducheſſe, which brought her into ſome ſuſpition of her honour.

As ſoone as ſhee knewe thereof ſhee quickly deuiſed who was

was the author of this Homicide, Tyrendos her louer, whom she neuer saw afterward, albeit all the rest of her life, he was the chiefest Darling of her desires.

The Duke who was old and loued his Ladie aboue measure, neuer enquired farther of Dirdans death: nor cared he much what the worlde might thinke: But misdeemed the Duchesse had caused him to bee dispacht to banish him for euer her presence, for which deede hee esteemed her the more, and had better opinion of her than before; and so we will let them liue, the one ioyfull of this perswasion, and the other passing sorie to depart from her swéet louer, whome wee shall finde hereafter in Constantinople at the Tourney to behaue himselfe better in other Combats.

CHAP. XI.

How the King *Florendos* arriuing with his Queene *Griana* his wife in *Constantinople*, were most honourably receaued by the Emperour *Palmerin* their Sonne, who met them with a great traine a dayes iourney from the Cittie: And howe *Primaleon Abenuncq* and *Arnasio* receaued the order of Knighthood.

THe King Florendos and his Queene Griana being departed from Macedon, in the company of the principall Barrons of their kingdome, tooke by their way all the pastimes they could deuise: But being entred within the bounds of the Empire, they were ioyfullie receaued by the Emperours commandement, who had giuen order to his subiects for the same effect: as also for that the Queene Griana his mother was their naturall and Soueraigne Princesse.

All this Troupe being arriued within a dayes iourney of Constantinople, hee came to méete them, accompanied with the greatest part of the Nobles of his Court, with all the honour, and most kinde entertainment, as a Sonne so well

brought

brought vp as hee might shew towards his Father and Mother: who hauing first greeted him, receaued and cherished Primaleon and Palmendos his Children, who did vnto them all the reuerence possible to be thought of: The like curtesie vsed Arnedes towardes them (whom they reputed as their Sonne,) and in likemanner all the rest, both Kings and Princes who accompanied the Emperour: so that these interchaungeable greetings and welcomes were so long a doing, that they could not reach Constantinople: but take vp their rest for that night, in a most pleasant place foure miles distant from the Cittie, where the Queene could not fill her eies with beholding her Sonne.

The next morne on the morrow they entred the Cittie with the greatest ioy, that was euer heard of, the Empresse, Queene Arismene, the three Infantes, and many Ladies of high renowne, who kept them company being at the first Gate of the Pallace to receaue them more Honourable: who entertayning first the King and the Queene, after them came the three Infantes to kisse their hands, and then all the other Princes one after another.

These welcomming Ceremonies of the Ladies accomplished, all this Royall companie mounted into the principall Hall of the Serraglia, where the Emperour sate downe next to the King his Father, and the Empresse (bringing her three Daughters with her) next the Queene, who could not satiate her selfe surueying both in vniuersall loue, so Heroicall and Illustrious a crew: In so much that in this profounde contemplation, shee could not countermaunde her spirite, but her eyes must shedde some teares for gladnesse, when she thus brake forth.

Lord God, now let mee leaue this mortall world when it shall please thee, seeing thou hast giuen mee this Grace to represent before mine eyes, the thinges which I so extreamely desired to see.

Scarce had she finished these few words but the enchaunted Virgin, who was within the auncient chamber of the Emperor, sent

lent forth two most lamentable scriches, and had not at their comming shewed any signe of gladsomnes, as shee was alwaies accustomed to doe at the arriuall of the Emperours fauourites. So that the Emperour (who was very sorrowful for this presage) gaue great heede vnto it, with many other Seigneurs who knew the nature of this animall, beleeuing verily by her hoarse chattering, some sinister accident was presaged: But he dissembled it as well as he might, without shewing any outward appearance, but said incontinent to the Queene.

Madame, I beseech you most humbly, let vs not talke in this happy time of recreation, of any thing which may driue vs into melancholly, seeing you being yet farre from death, shall see your selfe long time serued and reuerenced of all those who are assistant before you; and therefore do not disnay your selfe by any thing which may bring you into a vaine and fantasticall opinion.

My sonne replied the Queene then; Death hath this by nature, that there is none liuing in this world, who can shew himselfe so strong against it, that he may auoyde it; our predestination being such, we cannot prolong or abridge it one little minute; whereby ensueth, that for any thing I haue now saide, I can neither retarde it, nor hasten it any thing the sooner.

When shee had spoken these words with a very good grace, shee embraced the Infant Flerida, who seemed vnto her the fayrest and gratious creature shee had euer seene in her life before, and kissing her sweete cheekes many times shee saide.

Fayre Daughter, I pray God, he suffer you to liue so long as your beauty and sweetnes of feature deserueth; wherein I thinke well, neither maide nor wife can bee founde, to come once neere your Paragon: Most true was that which the Queene spake; for whosoeuer beheld this young Princesse, iudged her to be a Venus in beauty, and a Pallas in prudence. And this day they past in great ioy and sollace throughout all the Court, and in the euening, Primaleon besought the Em-

perour

perour againe, that hee would the next day following, giue him the order of Knighthood, and the same hee entreated him also to do for Abenuicq and Armado Duke Tolomus sonne which he accorded vnto very willingly.

Therefore on the morrowe euery one clothing himselfe pompeously in rich and sumptuous habits, except Primaleon and his two companions, who watched all that night their Armes within the Chappell, whether the Emperour comming with his father and the other Kings and Princes there was a solemne Masse begun.

You must vnderstand since the first time that Abenuocq saw Armandra the King of Spartaes daughter, hee was so attainted with her loue, that no other thought than of her dwelt within his breast: So that in meane time while the Masse was saying hee resolued to become a Christian, to shew more euidently vnto his Lady and Mistresse, the extreame desire which set him on, and especially to enter the Tourney as her onely Knight, wherein hee hoped to adde vnto his praise, that which he could make good there.

The Masse beeing ended, hee humbly besought the Emperour, hée might be partaker of the holy Sacrament of Baptisme, before he came to the order of Knighthood: For knowing how much the Law of Christ was more sublimate and its blessednes exceeding that of the Pozes, hee would no longer liue in Paganisme.

Which the Emperour and all the Assistants hearing, were passing glad of his renouncing of Infidelity; So that vncouering his head, the Patriarck of Constantinople did baptize him presently, chusing for his Godfather the King Florendos, who commended him greatly for so vertuous an act.

For testemony whereof, he promised strait to make him so great and puissant a Prince, that hee should haue cause to put in oblition the estate and riches of his father. Whereof the new Christian returning him humble thankes, the Greeke Monarke turned himself towards Primaleon, saying; Son, request of my most honourable father, it would please him to

grant

arme you Knight with his hand, for if I haue purchased some little honour in this world, I can assure you all proceeded from him, who inuested mee first with this honourable degree of Knighthood; which I hope will be augmented more in your person, if it please him to enrich you therewith. Then you shall giue it vnto the young Amasin, and I vnto Abenuncq your companion.

Primaleon hauing heard what the Emperour his Father said, went full ioyfull to kneele before the King his Grandfather, beseeching him he would put on his spurre and girde vnto him his swoorde of Armes: whereof hee excused himselfe, saying it were better to bee done by his Nonnes hand: But the Emperour himselfe and all the other Princes, who were there prayed him so instantly, that in the end he was constrained to condiscend thereunto: and giuing him as well his fatherly blessing as the militaris accolados, hee some made him Knight: the Emperour armed Abenuncq Knight, and afterwards Primaleon himselfe dubbed Amasin of the same order. The ceremonies were done with so great pompe, that it was none before they departed out of the Chappell: so that the dinner staying for them (after that the Yeomen of the Pantry had recouered the Tables roundes) the Squiers of the kitchin were not long before they serued in their first seruice: So comming from Church they went straight to dinner, where the Emperour sate downe with his father, the other Kings and great Lordes beeing serued most honourably, and as such a magnificent Feast beseemed so Royall a companie of Princes.

After the tables were taken vp, the Queene Griana and the Empresse whose precision was no lesse; came to them with all the rest of Ladies so richly attired, that the onely aspect of them put some gladnes into the Knights hearts who beheld them; and amongst the rest filled some of their breasts with such amorous and pricking desires, which tooke so deepe roote therein, that they could neuer afterwards bee remoued thence.

Then

Then beganne the dauncing and other reuelling, in midst whereof thy enterlaced interchaungeable talke of many matters: Belcar toke in the meane time Recindes by the hand, whome hee brought to sit downe hard by Melissa with this language: Deare Sister I must esteeme great and maruellous the felicity which God hath within this little while sent you, to make you Ladie and Mistresse, of one of the most valiant Knights, who liueth vnder the zodiacke, besides he is in all other thinges a Prince so accomplished that there are few at this day founde to be his like in valour and worldlie riches. He of whome I speake is the Prince Recindes, whom yee see no lesse affectioned towards you with an intire loue, than desirous to shew you the experience: by meane whereof I pray you of all fauour betweene you and me, you will reciprocally loue him, for that he deserueth it, & his vertues of themselues should inuite you thereunto; and I promise you to employ my selfe so well for you both, that with in few dayes your hearts shall finde some ease and content.

The Damozell who was sage and as courteous as might be, halfe a little at her Brothers speeches, and made him this answere: You say true Brother, that the Seignior Recindes is vertuous, valiant and a rich Prince, & I should esteeme my selfe to want manners and grace, not to obay you in that which it pleaseth you to commaund me, seeing betweene you two so perfect amitie is continued: so that you and hee may be assured all my life I shall reuerence him in such sorte, that you shall know with what sincerity I here speaketh, who will remayne perpetually seruant to you both.

Now may I quoth Recindes repute my selfe truely happie aboue all those, who thinke to haue attayned the treasure of their felicitie, seeing you so prompt & ready to shew vnto me pleasure my Lord your Brother to preserue in his fauour, and if I erre in any good which God graunt me, it is onlie but for the hope I haue to make you the Ladie and Mistresse of me and of the kingdoms of Spaine.

The Emperour who was a vndistinguished Prince,

Prince, casting his eye round about (especially surueying the qualitie of those, who were in any conference with the young Princesse) that it would be a verie fortunable match betweene Recindes and Melissa: in so much that in time hee purposed to put it in effect. Likewise he spied Abenuncq sitting neere Amandria Daughter to the King of Sparta his Vnkle: whom hee permitted also to giue vnto him in mariage: to the ende to recompence him there with, because hee had forsaken his Mahometicall law: and whilst the Emperour had this in his minde Abenuncq boorded her thus.

Onely Mistresse of my seruitude, you might see this morning the victorie which loue hath gotten ouer me, making me renounce mine owne proper religion, to take a new which is strange vnto me: During which Combat, the poore slaue of Cupid so fortified himselfe with your lively and rare beauty, which hee shooting off at his eyes, hath so imprinted it within his soule, that no other thing were it neuer so highly esteemed can take that place from it.

Neuertheless, if to make sufficient proofe of his Paganimitie, finding this precious treasure neere him, it would please you to let him enter into the Tourney as your Knight, (which is the most soueraignety of his desires) you may well assure your selfe, you neuer saw so much hardinesse in a young and new made Knight as in him.

If for the loue of mee, quoth Amandria then you haue renounced the Pagan lawe, I am greatly bounden to bless God, and to thanke you for the good will you beare me, albeit I merite not the least parcell of any such honour, in recompence whereof I might be iudged ingratefull and to disiniterous, if I should refuse the honest request it please you to make mee, being but newly knighted and liued vnder so Royall a house as you doe: Wherefore I am content, and thinke my selfe happie, that in my name you will enter the lists, wherein I hope you shall winne such honour among the rest, seeing you had so good knowledge and deuotion of yourselfe to come to our faith.

Cadamo

Madame replyed he, you onely haue bene the occasion, in that to insinuate my selfe into your fauour, I get the knowledge of the Soueraigne God.

For that regarde shall I loue you the more quoth shee smiling, and will esteeme you euer more than any Knight, which may offer himselfe to mine eyes: in signe whereof there is a ring which shall serue you for a fauour in the Tourney.

This ring replyed hee, which now I haue by your gift, shall giue me so much force and courage, that when I should haue a thousand liues, I would employ them all one after another, seeing it sate vppon my little finger: so that hauing it in my possession, I shall prize it farre more than the fatall ring of Gyges.

This was the parle these two newe louers had together that day: which made Abenuncq in so great ioy (hauing vnderstood thereby his Ladies will) as hee past away merrily that night with the other Knights.

CHAP. XLJ.

How the Prince *Arnedes* was espoused with *Philocrista*, and *Palmendos* with *Francheline*, and afterward lay all foure in two beddes, which the Knight of the *Isle-Cloze* sent the Emperour with eight Musitians to make them all kinde of harmonious mellodie: And howe the next day following they opened the great Triumph wherein *Primaleon* bore away the prize.

ON the morrow which was the day when the Nuptials of Arnedes with Philocrista, and of Palmendos with Francheline should be solemnized, came euerie one dooth richly arrayed to accompanie them to the Church of Saint Sparie the round: but by soze they came thither they staide an houre by the way, so full were the streetes and windowes stuffed with knights who came thither to the Tourney.

At the last they came thither; and presently was there begun a high and solemne Masse by a Bishop, who giuing his benediction to the new Spouses, finished incontinent the Ceremonie which the Grækes had accustomed to vse in their Nuptials: then returning to the Pallace in the same order they came, it was past twelue before they came backe thither: by meanes whereof these new married Princes sitting downe to table with the King their Vncle, the Emperour their Father and the other Kings and Princes, and great Seigneurs, beganne presently a Consort of Musitions to sound on al kind of Instruments.

In brieſe they so feasted all that day that it were impossible to recount it: afterward bed time being come, the Queene of Thessalie and many other Ladies of honour brought Philocrista to her Chamber, where they laid her in a rich and stately Bed: whose Curtaines and Canope were cloth of gold, wrought with little figures of Birds, spred cleane ouer a Couerture of fine crimson Velvet, diapred euery where with great orientall Pearles. The couch (belet round with Imagerie of Perle, in forme of Pomgranets holding two great & braue Pedailles of massiue gold) had the foure principall pilers of the Mother of Emrande wrought in fashion of birches, vnderpropped by foure Dragons of greene marble planted vppon the bases of Calcidonie, and fote stalles of Jasper: and vppon the top of the pilers, stood foure Sphinges of fine Agate, counting somere the naturall creatures, that you would haue said there had bin nothing in the wanting but the spirit.

The like did the Empresse to Francheline with many other Ladies in her Chamber, and in a Bed of no lesse riche & artifice thā that of Philocrista, as comming both out of one maris shop, and from one & the same worke-master that made them.

Afterward did the Emperour and all the other Kings, conduct the Bridegroomes each of them into his Ladies chamber, where leauing thē alone remained not long, but there began a new Metamorphesis to Philocrista & Francheline, for that of

vertuous maidens they were within a small time translated into most faire and gratious wiues: Whereof gaue good testimony to them that beheld it then, a liuely vermillion blush, which after the sodaine mutation remained a good while vpon their cheekes: During which chaunge of name and not of person, came lower young men from forth their Chamber doores bringing a Nuptial Ditty which the Knight of the Ile-Close had composed, and sent into the Court at the same time, with the two Beds wherein the new maried Princes lay.

I doubt not but some of you perfect Louers, reading this passage, will wish with some priuate affection in your selues neere your Paramours in like loues as were the foure loyall Louers; and if it were but for the delight which your spirites might take, in remembring these things so rare and pretions.

So then the Seigneur of the Ile-Close louing the Emperour with such entire amity as he did, would needs by some of his Art make the feast of his sonne and Daughter more excelling and magnificent, when he sent him the two beddes and a Consort of eight voyces: who seeing the bower fit for their purpose began to sing an Epithalme thus:

GOD *Hymeneus* chiefe of Nuptiall Rites,
Yee *Bacchus, Cupid, Ceres, Hymens* powers
Be present here, haste hence with all your mights
All mourning sorrowe: Bring vs happie howers:
And *Flora* Summers-Queene for our delights,
Bestrew this Royall Court with choyce of flowers.

Your fauours shew to foure Knights Combarant,
Who try their Valours in the cloted field,
But if the Victor doo his foe supplant,
Or if the vanquisht bee constraind to yeeld,

Vppon the Conquerours head a Garland plant,
And him that's ſtild from further perrill ſheeld.

Be yee conductors of theſe valiant Knights,
That euerie one may win his Miſtreſſe fauour:
Entring the Liſtes in Armes redoubted Wights,
To ſhew their proweſſe worthied to haue her,
At the next Iouſting, Tornements and fights
Proclaimed by the *Greekiſh* Emperour.

Permit no worthy fauorite to dye,
Who is a Iouſter in this Courtly crue:
Let none beholde that fatall tragedie,
Leſt all the Court doe his misfortune rue,
For death alwayes dooth part good companie,
All myrth is daſht when ſadnes doth enſue:

In meane time let no dutie be ſurceaſte,
By help of gentle *Cupid* God of Loue:
To marry many a Nimphe this ſolemne feaſt,
Who in this Court doe ſhine as Starres aboue:
With haughtie Knights who thinke their fortune bleſt,
For their ſweet ſakes aduentures ſtrange to proue.

The Emperours Royall ſeruitour am I,
In humble durie readie to fulfill:
What it ſhall pleaſe his Sacred Maieſtie,
I may not diſobay his Royall will:
From the *Cloſe-Ile* I ſent this melodie,
To honour him ſet by mine Art and skill.

This Concort of Musitions so harmoniously deiected upon this Nuptiall ditti, that many yong Damosels, who ran into them like Bees to the hearbe Thyme, would needs haue a Coppie thereof: as well because it was partly composed in their fauour, as also because the Musicke thereof seemed almost diuine, filling the eares of all the hearers with a marueilous content.

Of this great curtesie of the Knight of the Ile-Close was the Emperour passing glad; & for that himselfe and manie o-ther, bee loued him all the dayes of his life; in touch that he redoubled the feast vpon this occasion, and would not on the morrow permit the Tourney to be opened, nor vntill the third day after: after which we will beginne to recount the glorious exploits, the memorable and triumphant Iourneis of our valiant and hardie Primaleon.

To come then to the beginning of his Martiall Chiualries, hee commaunded his Fathers Ingenour to chose out in the plaine field, a plot wherein hee should set vp a Halfe-yeard in-uironed with high barres and railes, in Longitude and Lati-tude answering iust his Diameter, and in forme Quadrangle, so that at the least fiue hundred Knightes might Combat a-front.

The first day hee purposed to appeare therein himselfe, as the Emperour did when discouering himselfe to his Father, hee was elected to the Empire of Greece: to wit, that with-in the close fielde should not enter more than foure hundred Knightes of chopes, halfe on the one side and halfe on the other, putting the Imperialles with the strangers altoge-ther pell-mell. Where Abemuq, Arnafin, Peypedin and manie other valiant Knightes were on the one partie, and on the other side Belcar, Recindes, with manie other gallant Champions of the Kingdome of Frannce, Sparta, & Thessalie.

The Emperour and the other Kinges hauing dined, they went with the new Knighegromes vppon the Scaffolds which were reared vp for them in the plaine: And in like manner the Em-presse & the Queene with their fine yong Brides vpon theirs, which

where euery one placed himselfe as well as he could at their best ease, behold Primaleon entreth at one of the gates of the Theater accompanied with all those of his part, and Belear and Recindes at the other; for there were two dores made, and at euery one whereof was a Piller of stone, very rich and sumptuous; vpon the toppe of the one stode the shape of Mars holding in his hand a Globe crowned with an Imperiall Diademe; vpon the other that of Venus, hauing her cruine Quiuer burning on the one side, and her sonne Cupid on the other, who leaned on her lap.

So did Primaleon giue order they should bee made, to the end they might as well perceaue the Ingenuities of his spirit, as his corpes all dexteritye. Thither would hee not beare his shield of the Roche-fendue; but his sworde he had girded to his thigh, because it was superlative in boutte. Howe after that the one and the other side had made a turne about the field, the Clarions, Drums, and Fifes began to sound the Assault: And then might you see this Cauallery hurry one against another with such fury that it was wonders to behold and heare the encounter of both sides clashing together. Primaleon before he broke his first Launce, dismounted more than halfe a dozen Knights, beeing all shrewdly wounded, or els in danger of death: Then drawing his sworde, hee began to strike so thicke, that euery one gaue him place, annoying his presence as if it had beene Medusa the terrible Gorgon. By meanes whereof, the Emperour who could discerne the good and perfect knights from the other, better than any of the standers by, seeing him so hardy and so spruce, iudged he would one day prooue a very good and an accomplished knight, whereof he greatly thanked and prayed God to preserue and keepe him from mischaunce.

Abenuncq albeit he were a little younger than he, neuertheless made his profe there very well knowne, and that he was the sonne of the good knight Olorick Seigneur of Babilon and of Archidiana: Of like valour and hardines shewed himselfe Armalin the third newe created knight. But

Primaleon

Primaleon who beſtird him more than any of the reſt, (laying on ſore blowes and ſo thick, that it ſeemed thunder paſſed the place where hee went) behaued him ſelf ſo, that albeit Belcar and Recindes did meruailes of their perſones, hee droue for all that by force of armes his aduerſaries out of the place of combat, for that one beeing firſt gotten forth, all the reſt followed him as faſt as they could at one an others heeles: inſomuch that Belcar, Recindes and ſome others of their partakers, who held out ſtoutly againſt him: could not at the length endure the ſtreſſe of their aduerſaries becauſe they would not fight at all extremities againſt Primaleon; in the end they were ſo conſtrayned to retyre them ſelues, and auoyde the Barriers.

The Tourney then beeing vanquiſhed by Primaleon, hee was receiued by all the Barons of Greece with an incredible ioy, ſaying with a common voyce, he ſhould be one day more valiant than the Emperour his father, who then returned into the Cittie more ioyfull than he euer was before: and giuing the honour of the Tourney to Abenuncq, hee ſaid that hee well ſhewed himſelfe to deſcend of ſo rare and accompliſhed knight, as was the Soldan his Father.

But the King Florendos many times embracing Primaleon with the teares ſtanding in his eyes, praiſe the Almightie God that hee would to ſo faire a beginning, giue alſo a better end: wherefore the young Prince kiſſed humbly his hand, thanking him for ſo fauourable a with.

Afterwards the other knights being arriued at the Pallace, the Emperour honoured greatly Recindes and Belcar, ſaying they of purpoſe ſuffered themſelues to be vanquiſhed, for that they had no will to fight againſt the principall of their aduerſaries: which he ſpoke to no other end but to comfort them onelie in the diſcouragement they tooke at this vnluckie aduenture: knowing neuertheleſſe that none in the Troupe could equall themſelues in hardieſſe and dexteritie to Primaleon his Sonne. And for that none of the principall died nor was not hurt in this firſt tourney, the feaſt was redoubled which they held

afterwards the space of fifteene daies together with open field for all commers: wherein some dayes entred more than ten thousand knights exployting strange and admirable deedes of Armes. In the which Primaleon boxing every day present, carried away from all other the honour and prize, as at the first: for albeit Palmendos and Arnedes the new Bridegroomes entred twice into Battaile with him, and did actes that every one was astonished at, they were faced for all that to leave him the upper hand.

Notwithstanding let us speake of a knight who was slaine during the Triumph, whereupon it fell out that many defied him afterwards accusing him of Treason, for that he had assured al knights who would come unto his Tourneyes, of safe conduct and returne throughout all the Countries of the Empire.

CHAP. XIII.

How *Perrequin* of *Duas* the King of *Pollands* Son comming to the Tourney at *Constantinople* to kill *Primaleon*, and to revenge *Gridonia* the Duchesse of *Ormedaes* Daughter, was slaine himselfe by the hands of *Primaleon*.

NArdides Duke of Ormeda, seeing banquished and done to death by the Emperour Palmerin, which Duke of a truth came to Constantinople to revenge the two Cosens of Tarisius his Brethren, whome the Emperour himselfe and King Frisoll slew with their owne handes, as writeth the Author of his Historie, his people returned with these sorrowful tydings to his Mother and the yong Duchesse his wife, who made such lamentable complaints and mone for him, that it was a pitifull thing to behold the issue of so miserable a Tragedie. And to the ende to make more memorable her mourning and funerall ceremonies, she commanded to erecte a faire and rich tombe within the Chappell of her Pallace,

Pallace, vppon the which for her laſt expiation (after many other Honourable Pompes required in ſuch a caſe) ſhe ſhedde ouer it an infinitte of teares (as if the bodie ſo much deplored had béene therein buried.) But what? Surelie he was not there, and I beléeue that if ſhee might haue recouered it, ſhee would neuer haue enclosed it vnder that lamine, but rather haue done as Arthemiſia Quéene of Caria, who after the death of Mauſolus her huſband (for the more Honourable interring of him) cauſed to be builded a magnificent and ſumptuous monument, which was afterward called one of the ſeauen wonders of the world: and neuertheleſſe ſéeing that edifice finiſhed (which ſhee called Mauſolus, after her dead huſbands name,) ſhe then iudged it vnworthie to receaue the ſo pretious and rare treaſure of her amitie: Therefore ſhe cauſed to burne the bodie to cinders, & the ſaid cinders afterwarde to be aromatized, diſtilled, and reſolued into water, that ſhee might be her ſelfe his Sepulcher: ſupping vp that diſtillation as the moſt exquiſite potion which ſhe could finde, for alwaies afterward to conſerue in her the integritie of her loue toward him.

Now this young Ducheſſe being euery day after her mourning readie to be brought a Bed, the anguiſhes and throngs which happen to women in that caſe, came vpon her at the report of this newes, ſo that ſhee was ſpeedily deliuered of a verie faire and beautifull Daughter: vnto whome for that ſhee was borne in a ſorrowfull time, and in that Countrie they call to lament, or to crie, Gridar, was her name giuen Gridonia.

The old Ducheſſe (who had no other heire but this one Niece) cauſed her to bee carefullie brought vp: and with ſo great diligence that ſhee grew to the ſight of the eye, ſo faire and perfect in all features and lineatures of her viſage, that her mother ſéeing her ſuch a quaint péece, ſware ſhee would neuer marrie her, but to him who ſhould reuenge the death of Nardides her deſunct huſband. And vpon this condition did ſhee then preſently ſet downe the marriage of Gridonia,

nia, who comming to the age of fiftéene yeares was required and demaunded of many Princes in marriage. Neuertheleſſe when they heard the law and vengeaunce which was to enſue, none would be ſo hardie as to accept the match.

So radiant and admirable was her beautie, that through all the Countries and Marches rounde about the Duchie of Ormedes they could talke of nothing els: By meanes wherof Perrequin of Duas, Sonne to the King of Polland, who was Brother to the Mother of the ſame Gridonia, hearing a report of ſo exquiſite beautie, had great deſire to ſée her: Inſomuch that hee beſought the King his Father to giue him leaue to goe viſite the Ducheſſe his Aunt, whereunto he eaſily accorded.

Hee then commaunding to rigge and equippe a good ſhip with all that might be neceſſarie for ſuch a voyage, ſoone after tooke the route of Ormedes: where being with a fauourable winde and faire weather arriued; the Ducheſſe reioycing much at his comming, entertayned him verie amiable, which Gridonia alſo knew full well howe to doe. She was ſo curteous and gratious, that Perrequin ſéeing her ſo beautifull, comelie and well nurtured, found himſelfe in a moment ſurpryzed and enamored, ſwearing for a ſmall reſolution to marrie neuer any other Wife but her: which cauſed him to breake thus with his Aunt.

Howe hee comming into her Countries to ſée and ſerue her in that wherein ſhee ſhould pleaſe any waie to employe him, hee felt at the firſt encounter his heart ſo priuely rauiſhed by Gridonia her Daughter, whome if hee were refuſed to haue her to his Wife, hee did thinke hee could not liue long afterwardes, and concluding his preamble, beſought her moſt humbly ſhee would condiſcend to make her Queene of Polonia, and that he would procure a diſpenſation from the Pope. Ah, deare Nephew quoth the Ducheſſe then, of this alliance ſhould I be more glad than you, if ſhee and I might in any wiſe conſent thereunto: But hauing ſworne long ſince, neuer to giue her in marriage but to him, who

ſhould

should reuenge the death of her defunct father, I may not expose you to so great hazard of your life, the Emperour Palmerin being so mighty and puissant a Prince, that I am halfe in dispaire, you will neuer be able to compasse our request.

I will not therefore let, replied Perrequin, to employ my best forces, to the end to practise so iust and reasonable a vengeance: For as well I clearely see, I am but a dead man if I enioy not my Cosen briefely to wife. If God woulde so much fauour you then (quoth the Duchesse) that you might bring your purpose to passe, assure your selfe not onely to haue in recompence Gridonia mine onely Daughter to your wife, but my selfe also for your humble and perpetuall seruant, with the whole estates and riches that God hath giuen vnto vs both: wherein I shall esteeme my selfe the most happiest of all step-dames, winning such a sonne in law, as I could not chose a better if I should seeke one throughout all the inhabitants from the one to the other Pole: So that I beseech the Almighty that he will so direct your actions, that the end may be as prosperous and happy, as I poore and desolate widdowe do wish it. The Knight thanked her curteously for this good affection; and if hee were very glad on the one side, hee found himselfe farre more pensiue, counting with himselfe what was to be done, to conduct so tickleisome an enterprise to an issue: The which being vnderstood by Gridonia, she reioyced as the Louer who could haue beene willing to haue remitted the condition of this vengeance, to the end to hasten sooner the consummation of her marriage; neuertheless, she would not gainesay or striue against that which her Mother and Grandmother had resolued therein.

As Perrequin was in profounde consideration howe to lay this Ambush, beeing able to deuise no meane, which might seeme easie enough to effect it with sauegarde of his soule and body, hee had newes by certaine Merchants who came from Constantinople, of the Ioust which Primaleon had published throughout the Empire: whereupon he conceaued exceeding gladnes, hoping to goe thither quickly, and vnder pretence of

Iouſting in that ioyfull ſpectacle to kill Primaleon by treacherie.

So declaring to the Ducheſſe and Gridonia amply his deſire (after he vnderſtoode they ſhulde bee very well ſatiſfied with Primaleons death, as being the thing which trold much trouble and diſturbe the Emperours Court) purpoſed to depart ſpedily accompanied with fifténe Knights of chaſte, whom he gaue to vnderſtand all the points of his conſpiracie: But when he came to take his leaue of the Ducheſſe and her Daughter, they could not preuaile ſo much ouer the weake and feminine nature, but muſt plainely ſhew by apparent tokens the ſorrow and diſcontent which this departure did cauſe their ſpirits, eſpecially Gridonia, who for all the demonſtration of her anguiſh, prayde the Soueraigne aboue to ſafegard & preſerue him from mortall danger, for that the Emperour and his people were in all their affaires moſt fortunate. Perrequin comforted her as well as he could, and ſéeing the teares diſtilling from her faire eyes, déemed himſelfe beloued of her vnfaigneedly; which encreaſed ſo much the more his force and courage; then embarking himſelfe, and ſetting ſayle, hee came ere long after to ſurge in the Roade of Conſtantinople, where hee commaunded to ſtrike ſayle to goe a ſhore, and Campe himſelfe in the Playne as did the other Knights.

It was now the firſt day of Primaleons Iouſts, when the Polonian vnderſtoode by all men that he did marueilous Actes of Chiualry, behauing himſelfe like a Hector in middeſt of the field: which was a cooling to him, fearing leaſt he ſhould not at his eaſe haue his will of him. Yet hee encouraged himſelfe, and prayed his fifténe confederates to bende their eyes and heart only vpon Primaleon, caring not a ruſh for the reſt, and that hee would doe the like to ſet him quickly packing out of this worlde: in ſuch ſort that this night he would not go to the Pallace for feare leſt the inchaunted Wyde ſhould reueale by ſome token the plot of his treaſon; the nature of that creature being well knowne thorough out all the Countries and Frontiers of the Empire.

On the morrow arming himselfe with a rich and prowde Harneſſe, hee entred with fifteene Knights within the field, beeing shewed vnto Primaleon by the deuiſe of his Armes; whom hee knewe otherwiſe before hee had béene long within the Barriers by his great Prowesſe: For ſo ſoone as the Clarions and Trumpets had ſounded the Alarme hee began to doo ſtrange and marueilous deeds of Armes.

Which the two Knights of Perrequin ſéing, they crept néere him before hee was aware, and had hee not had his cuyrace of proofe well tempered with the fineſt ſteele, they had wounded him ſore.

Neuertheleſſe, hee who felt himſelfe thus outraged, as a Lion aſſailed with two bloud-hounds, turned towards them full of furious choller, and reaching either of them a downeright knocke vpon the Helmet ſent them ſome to the ground.

Then began Primaleon ſo fell a fight, ſkirmiſhing on the right hand and on the left, that Perrequin could no longer ſuffer this braue, but taking a Launce without ever ſpeaking worde, ran with all his force at his backe behinde, ſo that hee made him loſe his ſtirrops, and piercing his Armour, ſcratcht his fleſh a little.

You néede not demaund whether Primaleon found himſelf more aſhamed of this encounter, than ſorry not to know who might be the Knight who ſet vpon him in this cowardly ſort: So that turning bridle he after him bravely beating him luſtily. In the meane while Perrequin ſtood not ſtill but did the like to him, as he who deſired nothing els but to make him quickly loſe his life. Recindes who perceaued this ſharpe and cruell battell, ſtepping betweene them parted them for that time; and on the morrow alſo when they renued the like: Wherat Perrequin grew wrath, that he might not haue his will, albeit he feared much the ſturdy and heauy blowes of his aduerſary. Then began Primaleon to take it in dudgeon finding him alwaies before him offering ſuch faſhion of Combat, feeling rather a mortall e bloudy fight, than an exercyſe of ioy e paſtime; wherefore he ſwore to be reuenged of him, if hee encountred him

him any more in the Tourney: which fell out euen so; for that vpon the morrow seeing him with his Launce in his rest to come amaine vpon him, snatcht another out of his Squiers hands quickly, saying aloud in great indignation: Discourteous Knight, I know not who you are, who filled with such a fury and malice against me, will not suffer me to be one minute of an houre at quiet. Neuer the lesse I will see now whether I can vncase this fellowe, who thinkes to dispatch him, who neuer (as farre as hee knoweth) offended him in his life.

Finishing these speeches, he went to charge him with his sword, which he thrust so right into the middest of his breast, that it ranne more than a foote and a halfe cleane thorough his shoulders, and at that instant sent him as dead as a Dogge to the ground, prosecuting his talke thus.

Now shalt thou leaue mee maugre thy malice, who hast dogde mee so these three dayes, that I could neuer keepe thee from behind or before mee: Then in great hardiesse hurling into the thickest of the presse, hee charged them so courageously of all sides, that ere long hee forced all his aduersaries to turne their backs.

To make a short abridgement, hee got alwaies the honour of the victory, as long as the Tourney lasted: Whereof the Emperour and all the Nobles of Greece were wailing ioyfull of his generosity, valour and Chiualry. But let vs nowe before wee conclude this first part of our History, see what good lucke befell the Spanish Prince, who hath lately left the Iouits to Court his fayre Lady Melissa.

How

CHAP. XLIII.

Howe *Recindes* hauing espoused *Melissa* returned into *Spaine*, *Arnedes* into *Fraunce* with *Philocrista*, and all the other Kings and Princes into their Kingdomes; Except King *Florendos* and Queene *Griana* who died in *Constantinople* to the great sorrow and mourning of the Emperour and all his Court.

WHo might euer be able to recount the great magnificences and diuersions things which were done during the feast of Philocrista and Francheline? Surely the sumptuositie thereof seemed so pompous, and the feates of Armes so admirable, that to write the them well, they surpasse the eloquent tongues of Demosthenes or Cicero: For there was present so great a number of braue and valiant knights, that pon would haue iudged the whole assemblie, to haue borne the choyce and flower of all the men at Armes in the whole world.

But aboue all Recindes made his valour well knowne there, for the earnest desire which prouoked him to do his best endeuour in some thing which might the more recommend him to his deare and best beloued Melissa: Therefore the Emperour, who esteemed him highly, told the King of Hungarie, that he should get a good Sonne in law, if he purposed to giue him his Daughter in marriage. King Frisoll answered, how would be very willing of this alliance, and calling his sonne Belcar, Recindes great friend to be sent for: demaunded him his aduise, and what coniecture hee had concerning his will in this matter: Whereunto making answere, that it was the most affectionate point of the Castilians honour: beganne thus to set this businesse abroach.

Lord Recindes, your valour and chiualrie sheweth it selfe so Heroicall among this Illustrious Troupe, that I doue you

as much as my Sonne Primaleon: so that to acquite my selfe in part of satisfaction of the good turnes I owe you, having done mee this great Honour, to come and visite mee in my house, I am content to give you for wife Melissa my niece, Daughter to so Honourable a King, as is my Brother of Hungarie: As for the perfections of the Infante, seeing you know and see them every day your selfe, I will not labour to dilate further upon her praise, seeming to mee that the amitie betweene you and my Sonne Belcar should bee farre more inseperable when the accomplishment of this alliance should be consummate.

The Knight most attentively giving eare to the Emperours talke, bowed himselfe with a lowly reverence to kisse his hande, and likewise king Frisols, accepting him for his father, and reputing him selfe for the happiest Spanish Knight that ever set saile toward the Fennes of Meotis, for that he alone had compassed such a marriage: the which was solemnized the morrow after with so much pompe and a newe supply of Tourneying & Tilting, that Primaleon had leysure inough to shew his singuler prowesse & valour: nor happned there any thing during all these Triumphes which disquieted the Emperour in minde but the death of Perrequin, knowing that he was not the least of his faction, for otherwise he would not have cared so much for it.

When all the feasts were finished, the Emperour gave many presents to many Knights, sending them home most joyfull men into their owne houses and countries. And in the meane while he shewed good cheare & countenance, Armedes solicited by his Ambassadors, demaunded leave to returne into Fraunce with his wife Philotrista, and so likewise did Recindes with his.

The Greekish Dominator denied them not their suites, but bestowed great riches upon his Daughter, to the end she should goe most honourable into Fraunce, and in like manner to Melissa his niece. Then he commaunded to rigge out a fleete of ships well equipped with all things necessary for

such

such a voyage. The King Florendos gaue moreouer manie rich and pretious Iewels to his nieces: the King of Hungarie not forgetting to doe the like to his Daughter, with whom hee sent a certaine number of his Knights to accompany and saueguard her home. And if the Empresse Veranis were sad at the departure of her two Daughters, no lesse was the griefe of the two Princesse: But for that they went away gallantly married to their content, they easily forget all forrowes past. Euerie one then taking their leaues, they betooke themselues to the salt waue, and so well were they fauoured by Zoylus & Neptune, that with a prosperous gale and a calme sea, they same arriued in the Coasts of Prouence: where Recindes hiding aduertised his cosens arriuedes: Philocrilla, followed the rest of his voyage with Melissa. And commaunding to saile towards the strait of Gibraltar (which lieth betweene the two mountaines Calpe and Abyles, at this day called the pillers of Hercules, because the one of them in Spaine and the other in Barbarie, were long since by him seperated, to passe from the Ocean sea into the Mediterranian) came to land in the citie of Siuill, where he was most honourably receaued. From thence hee toke his iourney to aduertise his Cittie Toledo, where the King his Father soiourned, who was passing glad of his arriuall: most of all when he heard the reputation hee had gotten in feates of Armes. In so much that going from his Pallace to entertaine them louingly could not forbeare weeping, seeing him in so good disposition; and Melissa his Wife so faire, beautifull and vertuous: So at the first, Fatherly embraced them both, and after that he had welcommed them with a thousand welcomes, hee ledde them both into his lodgings, purposing quickly to solemnize the marriage in his Court: which he did, and afterwards liberally bestowed many presents vpon the Greekes and Hungarians, which came to accompany Melissa, who returned all verie well pleased from him towards King Frisoll their Soueraigne. But the Princesse Philocrilla was receaued with no lesse sumptuosity by the King of Fraunce and all other

Dukes, Marquesses, Earles and Barrons, of that Kingdome: where they helde maye Jaustes and Tourneys for her newe and ioyfull entrance: wherein purchased great honour Arnasin Duke Tolomus Sonne, and Peynedin, hee who rescued so brauely the French Prince, when Lecheslin slewe the Hermite in combatting him, as you may yet verie well remember: Yet did hee nothing in comparison of Tyrendos, who would needes go along with this newe married couple to conducte them into Gaule: For that falling there in loue with a verie faire and beautifull Princesse neere Cosen to Prince Arnedes, and shee likewise being inamored of him, did meruailous thinges in Armes to get her further fauour: In somuch that the King, and the Prince his Sonne, perceauing their Loues, married them together some after: and gaue them so great Treasure for a dowrie, that the feaste being ended, they returned all to Constantinople, seeing the liberalitie and bountie of the King of Fraunce.

But to returne to the order of our Historie, the Emperour remayned almost alone by reason of the departure of the newe married Princes, and of so many other Knights which did accompany them: Likewise the King of Thessalie tooke his leaue of him, to the end to goe visite a little his Kingdome, where Palmendos and Francheline were most Honourably receaued with great signes of ioy and gladnesse. And the King liued three yeares there onelie after his returne: After whose death immediatelie was the Knight Palmendos Crowned: who by meanes of his valour and prowesse, enlarged greatly the confines and demaynes of his Kingdome: waging continuall war against the Turkes, hauing conquest in many battails, skirmishes and assaults of Cities.

Like hostilitie receaued that nation by Belcar, who incontinent after the Tourney and all their Feastes were finished in Constantinople, departed thence to returne to Dace: where as soone as hee had solemnely celebrated his Nuptials, hee set forth an host a numerous and braue

Host

hoſt to goe againſt theſe Infidels, and to reuenge himſelfe for faire Laurena.

In like maner euery one of the other great Princes which came to Conſtantinople toke their way homeward towards their Countries: Eſpecially King Friſol and the King of Sparta; and very willingly would the King Florendos haue returned into Macedon, had it not beene for the Emperour who beſought him humbly, to tarry a little longer with him: Neuertheleſſe, many dayes were not come and gone, before the good old Prince found himſelfe caſt downe with a grieuous ſickenes, wherewith by reaſon hee was already drooping and decrepit he died within one month afterward. The Queene Griana ſeeing him abandoned by the Phiſitions, and out of all hope euer to recouer againe, fell alſo ſicke with the ſorrow and griefe ſhee toke for him: And a marueilous thing it was, that theſe two both rendring their tribute vnto nature, left in one day this mortall and tranſitory life.

The Emperour and the Empreſſe conceiued ſuch inwarde griefe and anguiſh at this occurrence, that thorough the continuall teares wherewith they bewayled them, or through the abundance of melancholicke humours which ſtuffe their braines, they made account to goe keepe them company in the other world: Yet for all that, afterward recomforting themſelues as well as they might, they cauſed them to be both buried in a rich and moſt ſtately Tombe, with great funerall Pompe and Ceremonies. And if this Court had a long time before continued in ſollace and gladnes, yet was it now as farre in mourning and griefe, after this death, without any token of ioy or mirth at all. So that Primaleon all this time of tribulation and heauy cheare, gaue himſelfe to nothing but hunting & hawking, retayning many braue knights with him who alwaies kept him company which way ſoeuer he went.

CHAP. XV.

How after that the Ducheſſe of *Ormeda* had knowledge of *Perrequins* death, her Daughter *Gridonia* made an oath neuer to marry with any man, if firſt he did not reuenge her vpon *Primaleon* of *Greece*: and for what occaſion the Caſtel of the *Coc-fendu* was builded, whereinto the old Ducheſſe with *Gridonia* retiring themſelues, how as they reſted themſelues hard by a faire Fountaine there iſſued out of a Forreſt a Lion, which put all their traine to flight, and the Princeſſes in great feare.

Perrequin being ſlaine, the greateſt parte of the Knightes who beheld him in this lamentable taking, being alwaies at his ſide, alighted ſtrait complaining greatly for his ſo great diſaſter: but knowing his life irreuocable, blamed him without any dread, who had ſeperated it from his body, the which they take vp and conuaye out of the field. And after long lamentation and ſhedding of many teares ouer it, they did moſt honourably burye it in an Abbey that ſtode in the ſuburbes of the Citty.

Soone after without any long ſoiourning there, they imbarqued themſelues againe, and ſet ſayle to the firſt Port of Ormeda, not daring to returne into Polland; ſo that the Ducheſſe and her Daughter had the firſt newes of this miſhap: At the comming whereof, it were impoſſible to recount the ſorrow and wayling that they made; but eſpecially Gridonia who loued Perrequin with a moſt perfect loue: By meanes whereof ſhee vowed and ſware an oath in preſence of many, neuer to accept of any other man for her huſband, but him onely who ſhoulde giue her for an earneſt of her marriage Primaleons heade: And if ſhee and her mother made great mourning for the death of Perrequin their kinſman; it was nothing in reſpect of that of the King his father, and of all the

King-

kingdome of Polland, having knowledge of this mischance.

It fortuned that many Princes afterward sending to the Dutchesse to demaund Gridonia in marriage, when they understode the conditions, they doubted greatly whether they might euer be able to accomplish it or no: Albeit some surceased not for all that to prosecute their demaunde; menacing the Mother, that if she would not giue them her Daughter with a good will, they would ere long take her away by force: And the principall who vsed these threatnings was the Prince of Clarence, a most proud and arrogant knight. Insomuch that the good Lady fearing lest for this effect he would come to make warre vpon her, sent both her Daughter and the old Dutchesse her Mother vnto one of her Castels called the Roc-fendu which the great Grandfather of Gridonia had caused to be builded in forme of a Fortresse for this occasion.

This auntient Duke had an elder sister, who fell in loue with a young man sonne to the Steward of his house, a youth very beautifull and wise, and so exceeding was the passion of her loue, that she was constrained to discouer vnto him the affection of her heart. The young gentleman who shewed not himselfe slow to chace in this amourous Parke, vanquished with the beauty and prouocation of his Lady, loued her so extreamely, that to come to the point, shee felt her belly to swell by his deede; wherein shee vsed such cunning to couer the matter (after the example of the poore deceiued Nymph Calisto, for feare the ire of the Goddesse Diana) that when her prefixed time was expired, shee was deliuered of a most faire daughter, none liuing beeing priuy thereof, except one waiting Gentlewoman, to whom shee did impart the secret, by whom this Princesse sent away this Babe to the young Gentleman who was father thereof, who receiuing it as soone as it was brought, strait waies went with it vp to the top of a little mountaine not far from the Citty of Ormeda, where full fore against his will he was constrained to committe it to the hands of Fortune, to auoyd the scandall and dishonour which might haue come thereby.

And

And to the ende this little Baby should not be found out of any person, hee laide it downe a good way within a thicket of bushes and brambles, nére vnto a cleare fountaine, whose water distilled from a high Rocke which ouershadowed it: But the true directour of all things would not permitte this innocent and immaculate creature dying without Baptisme should beare the sinnes of her Parents, but ordained for it a swéete meane of comfort as presently you shall heare.

At the toppe of the hill there dwelt an old Hermit leading a holy life in a little Cell which hee had built as well as hee might best for his purpose betwéene two open Rockes, seperated onely by one Cleft thorough the which day might easily be séene to appeare on both sides, wherein it séemed nature had done her endeuour to cleaue them expressely with her owne hand.

This holy man descending from his Cell (as his custome was) to drawe water at the Fountaine, heard the crying and mone of one whom hee knewe full well not to bee borne long time before, and approching the place where shée was laide, moued with pitty, toke her in his Armes, to carry her with him into his Hermitage, praying God of his goodnes to preserue it from death: Afterward baptizing it, and giuing it to name Poncia, hee nourished it with the milke of a Hinde which came euery day into his Caue, hauing by good fortune not long before that time fawned nére the place.

So the good olde father brought her vp carefully, and she growing dayly more and more became verie beautifull and gratious in the appearance of her person: In such manner that the venerable Hermite instructed her verie well, teaching her above all thinges how shee should serue and Honour God. And she might be abought thirtéene or fourtéene yeares of age, when the blessed olde man departing this mortall life passed into life euerlasting, and left behinde him this comfortlesse young Hermitesse in the austere desert: Neuertheless this vnfortunate little soule béing sage and well brought vp, commended her selfe deuoutly vnto God, that it would please

him

him to take her into his protection, which did not faile her of his pitifull aide and succour, never refused to any which craue it at his handes: for that the Duke her vncle delighting much in hunting, vppon a day made a meeting at the foote of this mountaine: where it fortuned by chaunce that all the hunters dispearsing themselues in the woode to discouer some game, a fawne by the opening of some dogges hieing put vp, made way before the Duke (who at that time was accompanied but with one onely Squire) after which he galloped his horse, thinking to giue her a turne by the swiftnes of his horse gallop. Notwithstanding the fearefull fawne seing it selfe pursued so nere, neuer staied till it was at the Fountaine, where the Hermite was wont to fetch water: and there breathing a little, whipt presently into the hole wherein Poncia was: for it was one of the Fawnes of the Hinde which had suckled her: and for smuch as it knew her well, and suffered her to handle it gently, it did quickly also leape into her lappe with his two forefeet.

The Duke who pursued it to the verie mouth of the caue, alighted soone from his horse, and entred the caue with his naked sworde in hand, wherewith Poncia was soze afraide and dismayed at so strange a sight: because that since shee had any knowledge or remembrance, shee as yet had neuer seene anie other person in this world but the good Hermite now dead, hauing neuer in her life gone further abroad, than to the Fountaine which was at the Forrest side. If the mayden were abashed, the Duke was no lesse in a great marueile, when putting vp his sworde into his scabbard hee thus bespake her.

For thy loue my Darling will I spare to kill this Hart which I haue taken so great paine to chace hither: But tell me of curtesie, who brought you hither into this deserte but for that she made him no answere, he approaching some what nere, and taking her by her faire white handes, he held and handled them gentlie, knowing well by their fashion, that the Virgin was come of some high and noble blood: By meanes whereof finding her a little strange, by reason of the feare which

which might haue seated her harr, he begannte to shew her all curtesies hee could best deuise: so that after a little the young Hermitesse emboldened her selfe to answere him in this sort.

Faire Lord I cannot tell what hath moued you to come in to this place to affright, and to put almost out of her witte a poore creature dedicated to the seruice of God: seeing that you seeme to me a man of a farre diuerse and strange maners than was my Father who lieth a sleepe behinde this Alter, & is the only person of this world, that I euer sawe in my life vntill this present houre.

I cannot tell who engendred thée quoth the Duke, well I can assure thée that thy beautie hath so rauished my heart, that I account it a most happie houer wherein I haue pursued thy little Fauone hither: and knowe that I am Lorde of all this Countrie, who desire to doe thée some great good: if thou canst resolue to credit me in the thinge which I shall tell thée: seeing it hath pleased God replied Poncia to guide me into this heremitage, I beseech you permit not that any wrong bee offered to mine honour: Feare not daughter said the Duke, but you shall be greatly loued and tendred of me.

The God of heauen graunt it quoth the yong Nunne, that it may be according to the decrée of his diuine pleasure: The grace this Mayden had in her honest talke, pearced so deepe in to the heart of the Duke, that what by promise, by flattery, or otherwise, before an houre was past hee appeased the furie of his passion, making her of a mayden dedicated to Pallas, a wife ready to offer the Cestion or Girdle to Venus, to present him her seruice, whereof he was the gladdest man that might bee: Neuertheless well bethinking with himselfe afterwards what was best for him to do, (for that he was alreadie married) purposed to build in the same place a stronge and inuisible Castell, there to keepe her within it, with all the pleasure and contentment that her heart might desire. For this cause hee sent word by his Squire to the Hunters, who chased in the Wood, that they should euery man returne into the

Citie,

Cittie: And hauing shewed to him the Hermits Daughter, and afterwarpes making him vnderstand his determination: commaunded him to cause his Architect to come thither with a number of Artificers to builde a Fortresse in that same place: Whereunto hys Squire gaue present order, and returned with many rich robes for the young Damsell into the Cell: wherein none euer entred but himselfe alone, all the rest remaining vnder Tentes which hee had pitched before that same place. From which the Duke would neuer depart, vntill hee saw the Castell finished, which hee had caused to bee builded vppon that clowen Rock, whereof it boze the name continuallie afterwardes, and was one of the strongest and fayrest in all that Countrie, for the Sea inuironed it on the one side, and on the other side was a most steepe and inaccessible Rocke, except onelie on that side where the fountaine was.

Wherein did the Duke enclose his Loue Poncia, the which when her time was come, there brought him forth a verie faire and goodlie Sonne, who was afterwardes Grandfather of Nardides, Father of Gridonia: of the two Knightes whome the Emperour and King Frisoll slewe in a Combat which they had together: But these Loue tricks could not so well bee concealed, but the Duchesse had intelligence thereof: who seeing her selfe so much contemned by her Husbande, died for griefe and rage: Whereupon it fell out that for the intire loue which the Duke bare to the Childe which hee had by Poncia, hee espoused her afterward in second Marriage, liuing together in great pleasure and ioy, vntill the verie end of his dayes when hee knewe that shee was his owne Niece.

Now in this Castell retired Gridonia with the olde Duchesse, for feare they had of the Prince of Clarence, and arriuing at the Fountaine (for that it was both a pleasant and a delightfull place) the would haue fayne gone downe to refresh her selfe: But she was not so soone set downe vppon the brincke of it, but the remembrance of her dead friend Perargus

comming in her thoughts, renewed in her a pitifull and lamentable bewailing of his death, for that fortune favoured so much the Emperour Palmerin, who slew first the Duke Nardides her Father, and Primaleon afterwards this her Cosen, with whome shee hoped to passe joyfully the rest of her life: Whan while shemade these strange complaints, which might provoke almost the unreasonable and insensible creatures to compassion, behold there ruſheth out of the wood a huge and furious Lyon roaring so terrible, that all the company of gentlewomen beeing wonderfull fearred, every one got away as well as they could: leaning with her only the good old Duchesse who was not able to runne away as the others did. They need not make question how great might be the feare of a simple and timerous Damosell, as of Gridonia, who supposed undoubtedly that to be the last houre of her life. Yet perceiving this Lyon to come right upon her, shee some perceaved the contrarie: for that hee began to fawne upon her with his pawes, and to play with his taile, as though hee had beene familiarly brought up with her all his life. In such sort that hee put his head into her lappe, and beginning gently to licke her handes, made her as much amazed, as if shee had seene before her eyes some new and strange wonder: but perceiving by little and little assuring her selfe of the tamenesse of this brute beast, shee stroked her hand upon his head, flattering him in most gentle and gratious manner: wherein the Lyon seemed to have so great pleasure, that Gridonia and her Gentlewomen putting away all feare, called to them againe their company, which was dispersed in the Forrest. And if some of them came backe greatly ashamed to have so abandoned the two Ladies in their greatest necessitie, yet they was more joyfull to see this beast so loving and tame, imagining rather that a Lyon by nature cruell and himmane, should be made so milde and gentle before Ladies: to whom nor to any of their Sexe is offers and so sitting gentle homage hee never shewed him selfe furious nor angry: but unto all Knights who did approache the Forest, and unto others whome he knew not, he did alwayes

furious

some displeasure, either hee scratcht them with his pawes, or kild them outright. Glad then without all comparison was Gridonia of this good fortune, and lead this Lion with her into her Castell where hee would never forsake the sight of her: In such sort that she stroked him with her owne hande, and from thence forward hee was a sure Gardeam of her person, being very tame, quiet and familiar with all the servants of her house, euen as if had beene some little Dogge, which seemed a most rare and strange case to all those in the Countries round about which had knowledge thereof.

CHAP. XVI.

How *Vlisbo* the King of *Bohemias* sonne, hearing the renowne of *Gridonias* beauty, came to see her in the Castell of the *Clouen-Rocke*, and howe hoping to haue her in marriage, hee went to Combat with *Primaleon* in *Constantinople*, where he was by his hands slaine outright.

FAire Gridonia then being within her Castell of the Clouen-Rocke, the Duchesse her mother who remained at Ormeda, for the gouernment and administration of Iustice in her Countries, had euery day messengers sent from diuers Princes which did demaund her in marriage; as well for her superexcellent beauty and good grace, as for that they hoped she should one day inherite the Kingdome of Polonia, because of her mother the Kings sister, who never had any Children but Perrequin whome Primaleon slewe in his Tourney; yet when they vnderstood with what condition they should marry this Princesse, euery one did forsake to make any more earnest suite, fearing the perill of death which might ensue.

But the King of Bohemia, the same who tooke Diuites and Cardonia, whome the Emperour deliuered afterwards (as you may haue read in his Historie) had sixe male children, the

youngeſt whereof named Valido, who was a valiant and hardy knight, hearing the renowm ſpread abroad of the great beauty of Gridonia departed his fathers kingdome, accompanied with many braue knights to take his voiage towards Ormeda: Where being arriued, hee was honorably receiued by the Ducheſſe, vnto whom after hee had a little refreſhed himſelfe and his traine, hee thus imparted at large his minde.

Madame, to the ende you ſhould not bee ignorant of the chiefeſt cauſe of my comming into this Country, knowe you that I being prouoked with an incredible deſire to doe you ſeruice, am departed the Kingdome of Bohemia (the proper place of my nativity) where the King my father happily ſwayeth the Scepter at this preſent day: and this vpon confidence, that you ſhall know the ſincere affection which I haue to obey you in all things, you will not refuſe to accept me frendly for your ſonne in Law. And albeit, that I doe not repute my ſelfe at this preſent very rich in earthly riches, hauing as yet my father liuing, yet may I well haunt to bee in hart and good will to ſerue and defende you from your enemies, a man more forward than any other Prince of Europe: For this occaſion I pray you graunt mee in marriage your Daughter Gridonia, whome I ſhall bee able to vpholde in her honours better than any other knight that at this day liueth.

Faire knight replyed then the Ducheſſe, to giue you my Daughter to wife could I well be content, if by any meanes it might bee, knowing very well the illuſtrious blonde from whence you deſcende: Notwithſtanding ſhee hath ſworne neuer to marry with any but with him, who for the Jewels of her marriage, ſhall firſt preſent her with the head of Primaleon of Greece, ſonne to the Conſtantino Politane Emperour.

This is no ſmall demaund quoth the knight againe, albeit when I ſhoulde haue ſome laſt and reaſonable occaſion, I would embolden my ſelfe ſo farre, as to dare to goe to defie him at his owne home to effect the ſame. I will tell you occa-

occasion good ynough, said the Lady then; you shoulde knowe that in a Tourney which he caused to be published at the Nuptials of his sister Philocrita, hee gaue safe conduct to all commers, when for all that he fleu felloniously (as if it had beene in a mortall Combate fought at all defiance) Perrequin of Duas, sonne to the King of Polland my Brother, who entred the Lists onely to the ende to assay himselfe against him; so that by good reason you may vppon this death accuse him of felony and disloyalty.

Madame answered hee, that is not sufficient to urge this euill act vpon him, because the Knight who entereth into a Tourney is as the man that playeth at Dice, who before hee sit himselfe downe to play, must make account that hee may sometimes lose and sometimes winne: Euen so the true knight should appeare within the Lists in hazard to leaue his life there behinde him, as soone as to bring it away with him againe.

Notwithstanding, seeing that I haue no better occasion, I will combat him, alleadging that hee fleu him in anger and malice which prouoked him thereunto: Whereupon I doe assure my selfe that hee trusting in Prowesse and reputation, will answere me arrogantly, and prouoke mee with some iniurious wordes which will giue mee more apparent reason to combat him.

And to the ende that you shoulde knowe I speake nothing with my mouth which my heart forethinketh not; I promise to depart incontinently hence, and to take my voyage to Constantinople, where if I dye in the battell, it shall be for me a perpetuall honour and praise, to dye for so perfect a Lady as Gridonia is; and if I chaunce to vanquish mine enemy I shal purchase the most requisite and rare treasure that Nature might present me on this earth. Trus it is Madame, that I would greatly desire that it would please you of curtesie to let me see the Princesse your Daughter before my departure, for that hauing once imprinted her liuely beauty within my hart, shee shall double augment my force and courage.

That

That will I not refuse you saide the Duchesse, but I accepte it vnto you with all my hart, yet not without aduertising you before hand, that you shal put your selfe in great perrill of your life, by reason of a Lyon which gardeth her continually: the which wareth fierce and cruell so soone as her perceiueth any Knights come neare my Daughter.

For all that will not I let to go (sir answered then Valdo) hoping I shall well enough defend my selfe if the beast come to assaile me. Hauing then taken this resolution, the Duchesse sent with him, one of the Gentlemen of her house, with expresse commandement not to suffer any other to enter within the Castell but this Knight onely: where when he came afterwards, and that Gridonia knew that it was the King of Bohemiaes Sonne, who would go to combat Primaleon for her Loue, she commaunded to bring him vp into her chamber. Which the Prince vnderstanding, he take hastily his buckler in one hand, & his naked sword in the other, then entred in without any feare like a hardie and valiant Champion: But the Lyon seeing him approch in this equipage, began to grunt and snarre, lifting vp his head furiously out of the Damoiels lappe, where he was wont for the most part to repose it. Nevertheless she held him backe by great force, by a lease made of gold-twist which held by a rich coller buckled to his necke: for that Gridonia was not strong inough to stay him, Valdo came full vppon him with his brandished sword to strike him, but she cried vnto him that he should not doe it except he would die: and that he should depart onely out of the Chamber, and they would finde meanes to speake together.

The Bohemian did doe so much willinglie, and much a do had the Infant to keepe her Lyon from running after him: yet by stroaking and making much of him, shee shut him vp within a great Chamber, wherein seeing himselfe thus imprisoned, he began to roare in so strange manner, that her made all those who heard him sore afraid: Whereat Gridonia was so vexed, that going out of her Chamber to speake with the Knight, shee spake but thus much.

Fayre

Faire knight my misery and disaster will not permit me at this present to haue any long talke with you: therefore I beseech the Almightie so to strengthen your Arme against Primaleon, that you may make him pay dearely for his treason: wherein I remaining satisfied, shall repute my selfe a most Fortunate woman to bee reuenged by meanes of the best knight, who euer put foote in stirrop.

So much astonished and ravished with her great beautie was Valido, that hardly could he answere one only word: neuer fearing to be accounted lumpish and of small discretion, he hazarded to bee his figure to this manner: Sometime faire Dame the heauens pitifully mee, and Fortune shewes her selfe so mutinous against mee, if being so rare and perfect a Paragon as is your personage, I should not employ my body and soule to their vttermoste, to reuenge you of the wrongs which are offered you: for that he should be very blinde and deuoide of naturall reason, who hauing once seene your selfe, if he should not iudge you vnworthie of amendde, and for somuch as you cannot stay heere any while, taking my leaue of you, I will now presently depart, hoping neuer to rest quietly in my bed vntill I haue brought this mayne enterprise to a good passe.

God be your guide and comfort replied Cridonia, and so well direct your actions, that you may obtaine a triumphant victorie ouer your enemie: to the ende her may haue no more occasion to redouble the anguish which he hath so lively imprinted in my soule. And vpon this point giuing him the last adieu, shee retired streight to her Ladie whome shee could not abide to heare him make such terrible roaring: which seemed to euery one to signifie some great mischiefe. Likewise Valido returned to the Duchesse very pensiue and doubtfull to obtaine for his wife so beautifull a Damosell: in somuch that leauing all the knights who accompanied him vnto this place to depart, he tooke along with him but two onely, the one being sonne to the Earle Marco (the same whom the Emperour Palmerin slew, because he accused Diartes and Cardonia of treason) to reuenge himselfe of the Emperour pledge for loue of Valido

very much to purchase his pleasure, & the other who was Duke of Somme, would willingly haue hindred him: for that it enuyed him to the verie death, that in his company should be any ambush plotted against the Emperour: in such sorte that the Prince of Bohemia went accompanied with two persons contrarying one another in deede, whereof he litle or nothing.

Afterwardes imbarking themselues hee had so prosperous a gale, that within few dayes hee came to surge within the hauen of Constantinople, where hee disembarked, being well appointed with his two knights bodyarmed: and beeing arriued before the Pallace, hee sent the Emperour worde hee was a Knight who required safe conduct into his Court, because hee came thither to defie his Sonne vpon a treason which he had committed: who being aduertized thereof, meruayled greatly that any man would be so hardie to come to accuse him of that whereof he neuer thought, much lesse euer put in effect: especially being an act of a Traytour, which was the vice he euer had in greatest detestation.

But the Emperour as he was sage and well aduised, imagined incontinent that it proceeded but of some death of Perequin, for the which he was so sorowfull all waies: by meanes whereof he thus schooled Primaleon.

My Sonne, let vs consider the difference whereupon this Knight purposeth to accuse you, wherein for aught he can lay vnto you, answere him not arrogantly, nor with the least iniurious words: for so much there is nothing more ill beseeming Princes and Knights dessended of noble houses, than vse discourteous and vile speeches. Ye cannot what hee shall say vnto you, and answere him honestly, attending what you shall best thinke meete for the iustifying of your innocency: For oftentimes the proude language giueth occasion of encouragement to the aduersarie, & in battaile the best Champions are knowne to be vanquishers in deede, and not contenders in wordes.

Wherein my Lord and Father answered Primaleon, and for whatsoeuer as it shall please you to commaund me I will

ance

her whilst I liue obey your will. At this instant Valdo entring the great Chamber, bowed not himselfe towards the Emperour, so much felt hee him selfe troubled and perplexed with this Battaile: but looking rounde about him a prettye while after hee had a little cooled his choller) hee drewe neere vnto the place where the Emperour sate, making vnto him this speech.

All ouer the globe of the earth, is your generous courage Noble Emperour of Constantinople, well knowne & made famous, since the time wherein a wandring Knight you passed like a pilgrime ouer the great Ile part thereof, seeking new aduentures of your Father, whome as yet you neuer did see nor know. And since you haue beene placed in this honour and highnes of estate, no man can say you haue done vnto him vnto vttermost to great, small, or meane: which thing I declaring or mine owne behalfe, I haue hereunto bold my selfe to come hither to demaund a Combat, hoping for good or badde which may befall mee, I shall haue no wrong offered vnto hereto.

So much I say, for that I seeme to complaine of Primaleon your sonne, touching the death of Perequin of Dans whome hee slew in Mountwise, wherein hee would neuer beg pardon to honour the maze the feast of your Children: trusting hee will not denie but that vpon the assurance which hee gaue to euerie one, hee hath massacred him verie treacherously. And you Primaleon if you heare this, I know not what excuse you may alledge against mee, who doth reproach it to your face that it was done in treason against him.

Primaleon who gaue attentiue eare to these iniurious speeches, role vppe with many other Knights and Barons answering him thus: Thou sayest truely you alone hast deuised & practised to take his daughter, with following this fatall and vnlucky aduenture, vnder hope to win a Tourney wherein I did not vnderstand that I should haue any thing to doe with the same, but that I followe him with my seruice vppon the like occasions as you haue done at this present, because of the affinitie

For during the space of three monthes together, I could never get me ridde of him, but still I found him before mee or behind me at my backe, with full intention to have slaine mee by his owne handes: But God the onely searcher of hearts, who knew well his disloyall malice, favoured mee so much that I prevented him before the execution of his trecherous devise, giving him that measure which hee would have offered unto me. Notwithstanding if you have so hot a desire to combat mee uppon this point as you make semblant, behold I am readie to enter the Lists when it shall please you, to the end I may by my best endevour shewe to all the worlde that the quarrell is false, and wrongfullie undertaken on your behalfe.

This contenteth me wonderfull well replyed Valido to let you not to refuse the combat, which shall bee a sufficient witnes before all, that the truth is such as your conscience cannot well tell.

Then Primaleon fell on his knées before the Emperour, demaunding leave of him to enter the Combat for this effect: and afterwardes in token that he accepted the Combat, hee presented him a glove which hee took at his handes very fast against his will, being ignorant which of the two had the better right on his side: for if hee had perceaved the least smoke of the peruerse and malicious intent of Perrequin, hee would never have mistrusted that his Sonne should bee vanquished. Which the Bohemian Prince seing (to shewe hee was verie glad of this acceptation) did reach unto him one of the lappes of his Harnesse, which the Emperour took also: Deputing presently the Dukes Ptholomey and Eustace for Judges and Marshals of the field: to the end they should with all equity maintayne the right of both the Combatants.

These Dukes who stirred not from the Emperours Court, to obey their Masters commandement, conducted Valido incontinently within the Barriers; where they encamped themselves on the one side, meane while Primaleon Armed himselfe: who for that hee was of a middle stature, but

otherwise

otherwise very well proportioned in his members, did beare himself with a wonderfull dexterity both on foote and on horse back; and sure had his Armourers fitted him carefully in all peeces, so that he cumeliglily to present himself before his father, who spake vnto him in this manner: My sonne, I pray God whome to prostrue you from death in this conflict, and to manifest thereby, that you are not culpable of this mischiefe which they lay to your charge.

Sir (quoth he) I can well assure you, that what I did, was done but with great reason, knowing before that hee sought nothing more than to have taken my life from me: for this cause I hope, he who knoweth that I pretended not with any wicked intent will exempt me from death, if he see that my life be as yet necessary.

Having ended these speeches, hee kissed his handes, which embraced him quickly, then mounting on horse backe, he take his way towardes the Warriers, accompanied with many other Seigneurs on foote. And in the meane while Valido who felt his heart boyle in a vehement heate to finish victoriously this enterprise, calling to mind the bounty of Gridonia, said, that a small time shoulde his enemy stande before him. Who after place was made by the Spectators, both in the running place came with a fury. His Launce couched in rest vpon the Bohemian, who hasting his Launce in like manner, brake it to the handle without ever mouing the Constantino Politane out of his saddle: where also this Affaire lost his stirrops at the straint of his, and bare also a little burr on the right side. Nevertheless, hee being an active and a valiant Knight in Armes, hee seated himself quickly againe in his saddle, and began fiercely to lay vpon Primaleon, with his sworde, but he who exceeded him farre in policie and dexterity, seeing ashamed hee had not at the first encounter made him kisse the ground, beganne to betwe him with such fell and heavy blowes, that within a while every one perceived who should beare away the victory. And he himself knowing that his enemy (who lost his blood by great drops) waxed fee-

ble in sight of euery one, bestowed thereon his mighty blowe, which stroke vpon his Mayster, that he clouen a two both his heade and heade pece downe to his shoulders, in such maniere that presently falling ouer his horse taile, Primaleon spake these wordes aloude: See what you are come to fetche to Spaine: then making cleane his sworde, he put it vp into his scabberd, and the Iudges put him forth of the Lists with great ioy.

Of this victory was the Emperour and all the other Lordes of the Court maruelous ioyfull, seeing so euidently the verity of this false accusation. By meanes whereof, causing Primaleon to be disarmed, and after bandred, for he had of some wounds which he had receiued at his aduenture, commanded the vanquished Knight to be caried out of the Lystes, and to be honourably enterred.

But the two Gentlemen who came in his company, made a maruelous lamentation for his death, especially the Counte the Earle Alarcus, who in lamenting him vttered strange things; so that by this meanes the Emperour knowing who Valdo was, spake for the Knights saying thus: I maruaile very much how the King of Rodogalli, whom I holde for my friend, hath permitted that his sonne should come into my Court to do here an enterprise, which so many knights hath greatly grieued me, sithens if I had foreseene it, and had known him as now I do, to be the accuser of my sonne, I should by no meanes haue graunted him this combat, as you may well assure him from me. Then the sonne of Diarues spake vnto him: My Lord, when I desired you to giue me the order of knighthood, I then as I do yet also, to employ my best seruice, wherein when you shall know my intention, you will not say that I came hither of mine owne accorde with Valdo, but full fore against my will, and as not knowing to the King my Mayster any thing of his intention in this case.

When the Emperour vnderstode that this knight was Diarues sonne, he made him many kinde offers, thinking him for the good will he bare him.

And then the Romans the Grecians (being fraught with extreame anger to the gall) could not finde cause to speake thus quickly.

Emperour of Greece, (saide they) both for us and your selfe it is honorable, since you see the Knight hath for her sake (being wronged) revenged his death, [illegible] Wherefore when he had no sooner spoken these words, but for his best advantage he quickly departed out of the Pallace, because that many setting out to the Forrest, to have found him by the bayes, did not the stronger sort commande them not to stirre after him, but to let him goe whether hee thought good, which was streight to the Sparrer, with his companions where embarking in Valadors ships they returned into Bohemia, to tell the King the sorrowfull newes of his daughter Ellebere-Apponides concerning great losses and [illegible] slaughters there for the principall occasion of this dispeede, for the which mischance shee was no lesse sorrowfull then the rest for his life.

CHAP. XVI.

Howe *Lurcon* a Giant sonne to *Dramagrus*, whome the Emperour slewe in delivering the Damosell *Genevida*, came to strike *Primaleon* vppon the same quarrell as *Valadon* had done before, and what successe he had vnto him after his defiance.

In Romania was there long since a Giant named Lurcon, whome the Emperour Palmerin slewe to deliver the Damosell Genevida, as you may sometime have read in the beginning of this History. This Lurcon being slaine,

and lawage as the other Giants, but a man very active and mirthfull amongst his friendes: and euen when the Nurse carried him in her Armes who had giuen him suche ouer liuing his fathers death: after the which, hee recouered by force of Armes the Castels which they kept from him in his minoritie, and liued neuer to marry before he had reuenged so great wrong offered him: So he began to make so cruell warre vpon Crispin the husbande of Esmerinda, that hee kept him at home within doores from walking too far abroade in the fields: and as he perceiued into the eleuated feare of his knighthode, when Perequin vsed nothing to accomplish his promise to Grislonia.

Of whom on a day hauing vnderstande the discourse, imagined presently with himselfe, none could fetch Primaleon about better than hee, nor better enioy the Lady: so that resting greatly in himselfe vpon this conclusion, hee cared not at all to goe to see the Duchesse nor her Daughter, hoping to haue her to wife by force of Armes.

Whereupon hee embarked himselfe in a Frigot, rigged with all necessaries to voyage into Constantinople; where being arriued in safety, hee sent away a Squier to the Emperour to demaund a safe conduct for him to come into his Court to combat with Primaleon; which if he should refuse him, he would make his vaunts abroad, holde hee durst not graunt it for feare he had of him.

When the Emperour heard the Gentleman talke in this manner, he began to be very angry, iudging presently that he came to continue the accusation which Valido began; therefore he answered him thus.

Tell your Master againe from me, that when I shall grant him the assurance which he demaundeth at my handes, it shall bee but to chastize him for his prowde and arrogant speeches, which are more bred in Giants mouthes, than in any other persons; being often cause they worke their owne ruine, and confusion thereby.

Then spake diuers Barrons who were there present, &c.

vnder

which

A Letter of Defiance written by the Giant Lurcon to Primaleon of Greece.

THe Primaleon of Greece, the most faithfull and valiantly defender of Empires, the Giant Lurcon Sonne to Dermiquetes, who hath slaine him with his owne hand by the death of which defiance: for so much as thou hast slayne my Father, hauing himself so much as to make thee to borne of Noble and Royal blood, thou hast slayned that famous marke of nature; before all the reputation which thou might'st hereafter, attaine by military discipline, beginning the quarrell by a most odious detestation and filthy murther. I summon by the order of the gentle Knight Perequin of Dacia, sonne to the great King of Poland, whom thou slewest falsely in the Emperours Pallace which thou beheldst at the marriage of the Sister, before he would faine be present the more to honour her person

ring himself there (he is not here to harm (in consideration of
by the treason) but that thou hast temperitie and forbearance
ly massacred him under the protexte of the assurance which
thou gauest to all comers: wherein I hould me that
ercule thou maiest perform a cowardly and dishonorable
pleat to give an encounter with so weake an enemie as
of him who hath committed no offence against thee
which I am ready come to fetch, to offer it by force to her whose
maintenance therein I abandon: for that I know
with thy good will thou wouldest not consent to so vile and dis
honable a thing. I have to confirme this by force of Armes
if thou hast so much courage as to enter the clase field with
me, there to trie it out by single combat.

So long as this Defiance was quickly read over by Pri
malcon, he returned to the Queene to bring her the answer
whome, here somewhat put to it, he found her sad and pensive
that if it had not been so late, she would have fallen to
have combatted him that night. Without any longer
attendance Primaleon thereupon the Empresse with
gaue him advise, by diuers and seuerall reasons, that they
are not to be done, opposing herself against it
should her, she hath leap to sen a little to what she
say further.

But the Empresse and her Daughters having
without answere by the ambassadour departed
that night entertaine their ages in
selfe long the discourse of
which did suggest
spirite, quite contrary to Primaleons, who for all that
did not forbeare his former purpose, but
take his rest
Empresse
nothing
gone but all
agreable Ladie.

Which when the Giant vnderstood, because it was ne-
ere late, would in no wise that Euening goe a shore, but hea-
ring made priuie of all that which hapned in the Palace vpon
this sodaine, did but laugh and make a scoffe thereat: saying
that if Primaleon did shew himselfe hardie and of great cou-
rage, it was possible vnto him in good season on the morrow before
the euill it was ended, so that to prouoke him the more, and in
the end he should not faile to enter the field with him, hee sent
his Squier backe incontinent with a letter of defiance which
he wrate with great expedition to this effect.

A Letter of Defiance written by the Giant *Lurcon* to *Primaleon* of Greece.

THou Primaleon of Greece, the most faithfull
and towardly defender of Tournyes, the Gi-
ant Lurcon Sonne to Dermaquus, who will
eternize his renowmes by thy death for euer: this
defiance: for so much as thou hast hunted
honoured thy selfe so much as to make thee to beare of Noble and
Royal blood, thou hast stayned that famous marke of nature,
before all the reputation which thou maiest heretofore atchieue
by militarie discipline, beginning thy exercise by a most abhor-
red dishonourable and villainous murder. I meane by the death
of the gentle Knight Perrequin of Dean, Sonne to the puissant
King of Poland, whom thou slewest faithlessly in the Tour-
nay which thou holdest at the marriage of thy sister, before
he would faine be present the more to honour her parting

com

ving my self, thou shalt not dare to denie (to confesse truth of the treason) but that thou hast shamefully and treacherously massacred him under the pretence of the assurance which thou gauest to all comers: Wherein I know not what excuse thou mayest pretend, except it be a shrewd one indeed: offer to giue in recompense and satisfaction of his life the head of him who hath committed so vilegall an outrage: the which I am now come to fetch, to offer it vnto her to whom he maimded it in vengeance therefore I admonish thee that inherwith thy god will thou wouldst of consent to so iust and reasonable a thing. I hope to constraine thee by force of Armes if thou hast so much courage as to enter the close field with me, there to trie it out by single combat.

So soone as this Defiance was quickly read ouer by Primaleon, hee returned to the Seruice who brought the same, whome hee verie roughly and in great choller had entertained, that if it had not beene so late, hee would verie willingly haue Combatted his Master that night without any longer attendance. Whereupon the Emperour his Father gaue him aduise by diuerse good reasons, that though are not to bee done vppon a hotte feuer of Wrathfulnesse should bee the best way to see a little what the Giant would say further.

But the Empresse and her Daughters hauing verie long without measure by the remembrance thereof, could not all that night sometimes their eyes to take a little sleepe: albeit nothing was the inconuenient of the last small disturbance, which did importunately molest and trouble the Emperours spirite, quite contrarie to Primaleons, who for all that did not forbeare his sleepe vntill the morrow: but tooke his rest well enough, as he was accustomed. Arysing himself verie seasonably in the morning, hauing armed and serued, as he should haue gone but to some Iustes or Tryall for the Countenance of some amiable Ladie,

Palmerin the Dimonstrous as the day appeared went a shore, and mounting upon a strong and mighty horse armed at all points crept his head, take his way with his people toward the Castle: where by reason of the hyne of the arrival of this monster which was alwayes seene about the Castle, where both little and great came about him to see him, & that being in armes ready attendo of the fight of his person, they prayde vnto God that he would forcouse & give their prince victorie against him: the same did in like manner the knight of the court who were in great doubt of Primaleons life, seeing before them so dreadfull a huge and monstrous deuell: nevertheless the Emperour who was accustomed to valure with such Tortoises and skarbabes being but lumpes of flesh without any agilitie of spirite or bodie; made light account of him: and would willingly haue accepted the Combat himselfe to haue eased his sonne Primaleon; but as he discoursed thus with himselfe, behold Lucon ascended vpon his horse, & him who beganneth with this abrupte speech to him selfe.

O Emperour of Constantinople, I rather wish thy ruine then that of any other man who liueth under the celestiall Globe, for thou slewest both my Father and Brother, even the little flowers of Chivalrie: whereby I haue euer since felt in my heart an extreame anguish in my heart, because I could never finde any meane to be reuenged of so cruel an homicide. Notwithstanding seeing God hath now opened vnto me the waie I hope soone to driuen to execution, if thy diuine reddas to fight with me vpon the conditions of my departure. I rounde my stirrups and arme him, which Palmerin vpon to make him more to beware he escape my hands this day. Thou knight quoth Primaleon I am resolued to fight presently the Combate which thou demaundest for reuenge of his death, without giuing thee any reason how or why I slew him: seeing I finde given to him account sufficient for my departe; and wherewithall I am content thy selfe therewith, I haue made him buy the refusall deare, as I hope to pay thee for the paine which thou hast taken to come so farre to this place.

Where

Herie glad was the Giant Lardon, seeing Primaleon ready to enter the Barriers with him, into which the Emperor commaunded the Duke of Perne the Earle of Redon to conduct him, and to assure him from all men except from his enemie: in the meane time there remayned not almost any person within the Cittie which came not thither to beholde this Battaile, euery man deuoutly praying him in whose handes are all victories, to shew fauour to their Prince, for whome they should be in great dispaire, were it not for the confidence they haue, that hee will neuer forsake him in this necessitie: as in him who neuer abandoneth nor reiecteth those who Arming themselues with true faith, doe build their rampart on his refuge.

The Giant then after hee had laced and buckled the strings of his headpeece, take a strong launce in his hand, and seeing his enemie come Armed, conceaued so great pleasure, that flourishing his Launce he thus began: This Battle ordayned to day in the blood of my aduersarie, shall take vengeance on that fellow who hath with his, pearced the bosome of mine auncestors.

Hold thy tongue, for shame great vnmanll, quoth Primaleon, holde thy tongue, and cease to vaunt thy presumptuous boldnesse, till thou seest thy selfe vanquished, for then is the howre to braggs and not before: Then the Iudges seeing these two Combatants in good will euerie one to do his best for him selfe, they departed the Warriers, and presently the signe of the assault being sounded by the Trumpets, the knightes encountred with such furie, that they rusht their attaches: For the height of Lurcon constrayning him to carrie his Launce lower against Primaleon, than if he had beene of his tallenes, so that he could attaint him but on the hippe, where pearcing his Armour he scracht his skinne a little: But the Constantino Politane, who came full vpon him with a right carriere with his Launce ranne him cleane throught the mayne into the bellie, for they dasht their shields and rusht their bodies together in such sorte that they both smoked at it: In this encounter

counter the Giants horſe had ſuch a ſhuddering, that hee could goe afterwardes but vpon three legges: by meanes whereof hauing the heauie burden which hee had vppon his backe, he kept ſuch a capering, rearing and flinging, that hee laid his louiſh Maſter vppon the bare ground: who in falling did ſo entangle one of his feete in his ſtirroppe, that his horſe traild him a long time from place to place: Whiche Primaleon ſeeing ranne vppon him with his naked ſworde in his hand, and before he could get vp againe, he gaue him ſo ſound a blow vppon his legge, that he cut the bone almoſt quite a two: whereat he caſt out ſo horrible a noyſe, that hee terrified all the aſſiſtants, but not him whoe he wel him with the Cemitorze which the Knight of the Cloſed-Ile had ſent him, wherwith hee ſo belaboured then with all his might vppon his Helmet, that cutting a two the ſtringes that hee ſhiued quickly his bare head: Wherevppon Lurcon entred into ſo intollerable a phrenzie, that being vnable to defende himſelfe from the fell blowes of his aduerſarie, hee purpoſed to gripe him by the bodye, thinking to diſpatch him that waye: But for all that Primaleon kept himſelfe at the point of his ſworde, and with a backe ſtroke vppon the Wizzard, felde him as dead as a Dogge to the ground ſaying: It is now that thou mayeſt erecte thy Trophies to Pallas and Mars for the victories they haue ſent thee, and not before thou haſte Combatted, as not long ſince thou didſt vaunte to doe.

It were verie difficult to recount the ioy and gladneſſe that euerie one conceaued, ſeeing the happie ſucceſſe of this ſpectacle: Whe which to the ende to make it publikely knowne abroade, the Iudges and Martials of the fielde perceauing the Giant to haue breathed his laſt, did accompany Primaleon with victorious acclamations vnto the pallace, where they preſented him to the Emperor, who receaued him with great ioy.

Then came forth the Empreſſe and her Daughters to entertaine him: ſhe had beene newly aduertiſed from ſome forren Countrie, praiſing and bleſſing God for ſo fortu-

tonie; the which began to bring some comforte and reioy-cing to the Court, which was before all in mumpes, verie sad and mournefull for the death of king Florendos & his Duchesse Griana Father and Mother to the Emperour.

Afterwards there arrived manie Knights to Combat Primaleon vppon the same quarrell, but it cost them all deare, as being those who defended a wrong quarrell, the Prince behauing himselfe euerie day more valiantly than other: whereof the Greekes reputed themselues most happie men, to haue after the Emperour so sage & valiant a Prince for their Seigneur: wherefore from diuers Countries were presented him manie good offers to marrie a wife, the which he would accept of in no wise, for the little desire hee had to marrie so young: But let vs discourse a little of the great perrils and trauailes that another Knight made him endure, who came to Constantinople to defie him vppon the same pretended treason of the Polonians death, as you shall in the next Chapter heare more at large.

CHAP. XVIII.

Howe Prince *Edward* the eldest Sonne to the King of *England* was inamoured of faire *Gradonia*, seeing her pisse against a wall, and howe hee was afterward conducted by a strange aduenture into a Monasterie of Nunnes, and what befell him there in the meane time he was within the Nunnerie.

KIng Fredericke of England brother to Agriola Empresse of Almaine, had by his wife manie faire Children, the eldest whereof called Prince Edward, was no lesse accomplished & excellent in the exercise of Armes, than verie well nurtured in good spirit and good manners, and in all other

other laudable vertuous and honeſt thinges: So that having receaued the order of Knighthood, he held dayly Iouſtinges, Mournyes, to exercise and make himſelfe ſkilfull in militarie profeſſion: And for aſmuch as hee delighted alſo in hunting, one of the brauеſt knights called Robert, ſent him a faire dog which he recouered of a Magitian who was a great Negromancian, as you ſhall vnderſtand hereafter.

This Knight Robert being in the prime of his youth had a great deſire to ſee the aduentures of the world, by meanes whereof embarking himſelfe among other Marchants, who went to trafficke and to ſell Armes in Turkie being tolled by tempeſt and foule weather on ſea, came to an anker in the Iland of Malfada, where they were all enchaunted except him onely, who pleaſed much the Ladie of the Ile. Whereupon it fortuned that hee lined there in verie great pleaſures, about the ſpace of two yeares; at the ende whereof calling to minde vpon a time his owne countrie, he fetcht a great ſigh from his breaſt, ſo that this Fayrie who neuer was far from him, deſired to know the cauſe of that ſigh, vnto whome hee reuealed the whole matter.

In good faith faire ſir quoth Malfada then, ſeeing you finde it not beſt to dwell any longer with me, I am of aduiſe that you depart aſſone as it ſhall pleaſe you, to the end to take your iourney where you may find better entertainment than here: And for that I haue loued you ſo treamely, I will preſent you a ſhippe verie well rigged, with all that is needfull for your commoddious nauigation vnto your owne Countrie.

Ten thouſand thankes I giue you Madame, replyed Robert, for the good will you beare me: and albeit I do not merite the leaſt part of this fauour, yet will I not ceaſe to remayne your perpetuall bounden, and a great deale the more, if you refuſe not to giue me this Dog which I ſpoile from at your handes.

Surely I ſhould bee verie ingratefull and little curteous quoth the Fayrie, if I ſhould denie you ſo ſmall a thing, albeit that heretofore this beaſt hath beene a Giant, Lord of the

Ile

Ile of Escania: who that I may in theꝛe woꝛds count you his hiſtoꝛy, deſiꝛing at eighteene yeaꝛes of age (when he receiued his Knighthood) to doo ſome feates of Armes in the woꝛld, embaꝛqued him ſelfe neꝛe his owne houſe foꝛ the ſame puꝛpoſe: And ſuch was his foꝛtune, that a great ſtoꝛme which roſe vpon the Sea, caſt him a ſhoꝛe in this Iland, where preſently hee found himſelfe inchaunted vnder the foꝛme of this Beaſt that you ſee, which I giue you alſo freely, as a thing wherewith you may helpe your ſelfe at your neede and ſhall be peraduenture ſometime occaſion foꝛ you to call to minde the remembꝛance of mee, which I recommende vnto you as much as you haue knowne the ſingular and perfect loue I doo beaꝛe you.

After many accuſtomed embꝛacinges Robert take his leaue of Maliada thanking heꝛ againe foꝛ his Dogge, to whom, (foꝛ that the Giant of whom hee had once the foꝛme, was called Maiortes, and foꝛ that he was alſo the greateſt of all that Iland) he gaue the ſame name of Maiortes, and afteꝛwaꝛdes letting ſaple towaꝛdes England paſſed by haꝛd paſſages, whꝛeꝛe his Dogge ſtood him in good ſtede.

But in the meane ſeaſon whileſt Pꝛince Edward was ſo highly eſteemed in his fathers Kingdome, the Knight Robert fell ſicke, who knowing the ende of his daꝛes weꝛe at hand, puꝛpoſed to make him inheꝛitoꝛ of his Dogge, as the peꝛſon of all the Engliſh Nation whom he knewe woꝛthy of ſuch a pꝛeſent; and ſent the Dogge to him by a Squiꝛe of his, beſeeching him to take him alwaies with him in company, and that he would not neglect him, foꝛ that hee ſhoulde make great account of him one day when he knew his qualities better.

The young Pꝛince was ſowndeꝛfull glad of this Dogge, when making as much of him as might be, he ſhewed him ſelfe ſo louing and gentle as if heꝛ had beꝛne the ſame of a little whelpe: theꝛefoꝛe he ſent in recompence of this Dogge great riches to the Knight Robert, who in the meane ſeaſon paſſed out of this woꝛld into the other.

Euer the Pꝛince would haue Maiortes at his ſide, whome

he loued as a humane creature. But lacke more he esteemed him, knowing the wonderous thinges hee did in hunting, to which sport he leadhim forth almost euery day.

During which idle and pleasant life, it befortuned him vpon a day, to see a thing which caused him afterward to haue innumerable trances: For that the knight his Father delighting much to build as well Castels as other pleasant and delightfull houses, for aboue all his most sumptuous buildings, hee caused to be builded with all magnificency one sumptuous Pallace, whither he was wont to goe to take his disport with the Quéene his wife.

It fortuned that amongst many other workemen who did worke in this new building, there was a Painter of Ormeda, who by chaunce was present at the Fountaine, when Gridonia was met there by the Lyon; who to the ende he might at his ease fully behold the fauour of the Princesse, he followed her into the Castell with others that were there; for those of that profession are very desirous to see the Idea of so perfect beauty with whose lineament and perfect feature, they may helpe themselues in their portraitures.

And for that hee founde not any store of worke to employ himselfe in the City of Ormeda, he resolued to goe seeke in other Countries; So that being arriued in England, after he had gotten acquaintance to bee knowne, hee tooke charge to paint this goodly Pallace, which the King caused to bee built néere his chiefe City.

Wherein among many excellent things which hee inuented there by his Art and skill, hauing as yet freely in his memory the beauties of Gridonia, he pourtrayed her so naturall, that she seemed a liuing creature, seeming euer to them which behelde her, that she would open her mouth to speake vnto them; and there he set her in a place as it were in a Pilion, scituate vpon a Roche, and a Lyon couched vpon the skyrt of her Coate, holding his heade betweene this Ladies handes, who did gently stroake his heade and all the rest of his body,

Prince

Prince Edward who went much abroade to hunt at time of-
tentimes to make his mating in this place, where beholding
upon a time the worke of this Painter, saw there amongst
other things Gridonia paynted as you have heard: And
wondring in himselfe at so admirable beauty (especially to see
a Lyon repayre so peaceably neere a woman) could not chuse
but call for the Painter unto him saying; I pray thee inter-
prete unto me a little the meaning of this picture, and how a
Lyon may be made so tame, that one may sit him couched so
still neere a Damosell; for that it seemeth to me to be a thing
fit rather for little Dogges, than for such sauage animals,
which are cruell and indomptable by nature.

You say very true, quoth the Painter, but knowe for my
Lorde, that in the world are many strange thinges: among
the which, I sweare unto you by him that giueth me life, to
haue seene with mine owne proper eyes, the true Modell of
this my peece among liuing creatures.

Then he began to make discourse unto him of the qualities
and perfections of this Damselle; Whereat the Knight re-
mayned much amazed and troubled in minde, but answered
him thus.

It is a very rare example that a beast without reason, (as
this especially) hath so much foresight, as to knowe the valour
and bounty of a Lady so well accomplished, and that shee pre-
sumeth in her selfe to recouer the heade of Primaleon for the
earnest of her marriage.

The Painter affirmed to him againe, it was as true, as he
had in every word recounted to him.

Whereupon Prince Edward began to beholde a little bet-
ter than he did before his business; and because he reputed him
one of the best Artists that as yet hee had euer seene to handle
Pensill, hee researched with such diligence, and remarked so
exactly many times the lineature and grace of Gridonias
countenance disputing in himselfe whether shee might bee so
faire a creature as he saw her painted e coloured (in that place)
that from thence forth he fell into a more vehement alteration:

[illegible] lay in ambush for him
during this his contemplation, shot out of his Quiuer so
sharpe and piercing an Arrowe against him, that wounding
him to the heart, this wounde caused him so strange a Passion,
that for to finde remedy for it hee purposed to seeke all meanes
which might take away his paine, and to atchieue no trauell
whatsoeuer, in going to that place where he thought he might
recouer her.

The Prince then considering, that to purchase this Lady he
must needes combat with Primaleon, thought he should com-
mit to lowle an ouersight, seeing the amity so long continued
betweene their Fathers: Neuertheless for all that hee
thought with himselfe he should not surceasse, Palmerin ha-
uing heretofore taken away by force from his Grandfathers
house the Princesse Agriola his Aunt; and that vnder the
pretext of reuenging that iniury (after the example of the
faire Troian, who in steede of Hesione his Aunt, stole away
the wife of King Menelaus in Greece) hee had good occasion
to goe to combat the Constantine Politane.

Vppon this conflict of opinions which came to trouble his
minde, hee cast himselfe vppon a bed, where sighing without
ceasing he thus complained to himselfe.

Alasse Gridonia, how much had it beene better for the ease
of mine afflicted heart neuer to haue heard thee named, nor
seene the Pourtraft of thy face before my eyes: whose sight
hath in so small time penetrated so deepe into my breast, and
weakened my members in such sort, that they cannot well
preuaile to performe the duety of their office: Wherein if by the onely obiect of thy Image I feele so exceeding tor-
ment; what will it then do, when I shall in deede see the na-
turall and liuely composition of such a pierelesse Paragon of
Nature? Ah! it is expedient for all that, that I put my selfe
in search to finde thee out, to the ende that in seeing thee in bed,
I may giue some refrigeration to this my burning and new
flame: For if the sauage and inhumane creatures forgetting
their fiercenes, yeelde themselues so milde and gentle in thy
presence,

presence, what shall hee doe who hath some knowledge of humane reasone? Certes albeit I were sure to end my life, yet must I employ for thy sake my person with all the goods and estates that God hath given mee, seing thou art so worthie a creature: which I thinke the heauen hath reuealed vnto mee as it were by a fatall oracle, to the end that thou shouldest bee mine, and I thine perpetually. To atchieue vnto which point, I promise thee to refuse no aduenture nor perillous attempt which may present it selfe to make mee refuse it: Considering that by how much more Knights are illued of noble blod and illustrous linage, by somuch more it behoueth them to enterprise more generous and heroicall actes. And to this may inuite thee the example of Armedes Prince of Fraunce, who for the loue of Philocrista Daughter to the Emperour of Constantinople, departed from his Fathers kingdome: and in like manner Recindes Prince of Spaine for Melissa the King of Hungaries Daughter: I then being of no lesse house than the one or the other of these two Princes my neighbours, it behoueth mee to followe their steppes in the like enterprise.

So long time was the spirite of this yong Knight so occupied in making such like discourses, that being not able to forbeare, hee lost not onelie all appetite to eate, and desire to sleepe, but also therewithall all pleasure of hunting, wherin hee had so much delighted before: In such sorte that hauing none occasion neyther to beare nor to see any recreation, hee shunned the companie of those whome hee knewe desirous to bee neare him to make him merrie and pleasant.

One onely content hee enioyed during these his anguishes, which was to finde himself so before the Image of Cridonia, whose infinite beautie so rauished the vigilance of his eyes, that it did constraine his tongue to reason with it, euen as if he had beene hard by her proper person: being otherwise neuer satisfied to deuise with the painter of the graces of this Princesse.

It chanced vpon a day, that being inuaded with this sturme and wauering of minde, he went forth into a wood which ioyned hard vppon the ditches of his Pallace (where hee passed the greatest parte of the time of his passion) without taking with him any other weapons but his rapier by his side: So that walking vp and downe, he late him downe vnder a broad and thicke beech tree, to discourse as his fancie shewed him of some thinges which might giue him some contentment. And after hee had long time mused with himselfe, bethinking by what meanes hee might best goe see Gridonia, hee cast vp his eyes, which he had before fixed on the ground, as it falleth out manie times to a man that is perplexed & irresolute in minde to doe: Whereby he espied neare him a lowd man who would binde a burden of wood together in a little string, so that being vexed with some thing els, and to see him lose his time he said,

So God helpe me villaine, I perceaue it proceedeth of thy great blockishnes or froward nature, that thou dost labour in vaine after this impossibilitie: whereuppon it seemeth to me that thou shouldest leaue the wood behinde, or els if thou wilt carrie it away to haue a longer corde to binde it withall.

The peasant who heard himselfe miscalled, turning himselfe and looking behinde him answered, Prince Edward thou dost behold verie neare my follie, who canst not take heede of thine owne which toucheth thee a little neerer. I tell thee that euen as thou seest me lose my labour in binding this burden of sticks, euen so wilt thou lose all out with paine in all the trauailes that you shall vndertake for her who reserueth her selfe for a better Knight than you.

When the Prince heard these speeches, setting hand to his sword, he ran incontinent after this wizard, saying in a great rage: An euill houre for thy part great clowne canst thou euer to publish so neare me so foule a lie: For that in the circuite of the rounde world is there no Prince who doth deserue her better than my selfe, who loue her so perfectly that no liuing creature is able to attaine to the height of my loue.

The woodman who heard him speake in such a rage ranne away as fast as hee could through the woods, and Prince Edward after him with speede: Notwithstanding hee was not farre gone before an Armed Knight came right vppon him being mounted vppon a verie lustie and braue Horse, saying vnto him thus.

Gentleman let the villaine goe, otherwise you are but a dead man. Rather shall thou lose thy life answered the Englishman, than I will not be reuenged of him who hath injured mee thus villanously: How aduise thy selfe if thou wilt defend him. Yes indeede replyed the Knight, and yet I will graunt none aduenture at thy handes.

After these woords he alighted from his horse and facing his enemie disarmed, hee would not braue his woorde but closed with him, which Prince Edward did in like manner, and so they tugd a good while together. In the end fortune would so much fauour the Prince, that he laide his enemie a long, & setting his knee vppon his breast, he cut a two the stringes of his Helmet: thinking presently to cut off his head, but as he was about to do it, he perceaued it was a verie faire woman: so that marueiling much at this mummery he rose vp incontinent being in great admiration. Faire Lorde then ganne the Damsell, admire not to see now a woman in Armes, seeing that there haue bin and as yet are some which are courageous and warlike, and take it not in disdaine that you haue fought against one of them, for Achilles esteemed that one of his most signall victories which he obtained against Penthasilia the Quiene of Amazonians: and the valiant Mithridates King of Pontus, neuer craued better aide than that of Hipsicrates his woorthy louer: the which liuing in manly attire after the Persian manner, did enter into all dangers vnto which her husband did aduenture himselfe, hating the warr which hee had against Pompeius. So much may bee inough for you make a wonder at this strange nouelties Neuertheless if you will graunt me but one boone, I will conduct you into a place where you shall see things far more admirable than these.

Vrie

Verie willing will I accord thee whatsoeuer it shall please thee to demaund at my hands, answered the Knight vnto him, for the great desires sake which I haue to follow straunge aduentures.

Mount then replied the Damsell vpon my Hayse, and come presently away with me. But Prince Edward would first goe fetch his Armes, and make his people priuie to his departure, to the end they should not trouble themselues to seeke after him, then the Ladie told him, that to compasse their attempt, it was expedient for them to set forward of their iourney forthwith. So then he mounted vppon a Courser, and she vpon a palfrie which attended not farre from thence. Fiue dayes iourney they made, and met nothing which might hinder them in their way; and vppon a Saterday morning they arriued at a faire Cloyster of women built vpon the top of a high Mountaine in a verie solitarie place. There did the Damsell cause this Knight to alight, whome shee lead afterwarde into a faire Chamber, whether the Abbesse and all her Nunnes came to entertaine him, when his guide began to vtter these speeches vnto him.

Faire Knight, knowe that in this Monasterie there is a most strange and marueilous aduenture, which as they saye cannot be ended but by one of the best Knightes of this age: for that you are reputed one of those whom the celestiall planets haue adorned with so manie excellent graces in preheminence of Chiualrie, we haue hope that you will bring it to a finall end.

Now within the precinct of this Religious house is enclosed a verie faire Orchard, planted with diuers sortes of fruit trees, which in their seasons doe bring forth their fruites in abundance, and within the whole compasse of our Conuent is there none more delightfull place than that, except on the north side, from whence out of a fearefull caue euerie Saterday about Euensong there cometh forth a most hideous and ill fauoured old woman, bearing a rich Faulchion in her hande, where with she striketh flatling, when she meeteth by chaunce

with

with any Religious Nunne so furiously that shee sendeth her quickly to the ground: in such sorte that the poore wretch can not rise againe, nor a long time after get out of this traunce, so much doth she feele her selfe astonished with the blowes this fiend of hell giueth her: Which done, she returneth within her den lamenting in most strange maner: And I tell you faire Knight, that a great number of valiant Knightes haue come hether, thinking to follow her and to see the place of her residence, towards which none can approche nearer than ten paces, but he is immediatly repulsed verie rudely: so that we haue no hope euer to see an end of this aduenture, vnlesse you accomplish it now. For this effect haue I brought you hether, hearing by report in diuers places that your prowesse & valour doth excede farre, that of the most hardiest Knights of all the West.

Madame replied Prince Edward then, it falleth out some times, that many Knights which are esteemed hardie and valiant Champions, shewe in the end the contrarie of this vulgare opinion: And vppon me first of all may such an example bee shewed: Notwithstanding seeing I finde my selfe brought vnto this place, I will not let to proue what I can do in the aduenture, whereof I haue heard so great speech: Towardes the which seeing not my selfe endued with the force & addresse which is expedient for him to haue, who shall finishe it, I should not presume to bee so hardie as to march my selfe: so that beeing not able now to bring it about, I will only leaue as others haue done, the honour thereof to whome God hath reserued it.

CHAP. XIX.

How Prince *Edward* entred the Gate, where hee vanquished a Knight, who would haue kept him out of the gate of the Pallace which was there within: And howe passing further in, hee founde two Gentlemen within a Marble Sepulcher, whome he deliuered out of strange paine and the sequele.

THe houre of Euening praier approching, Prince Edward Armed himselfe carefully with a Harnesse that some Knight who had beene there to proue himselfe in the aduenture of the Cane, had left behinde him in the Abbye: Then being brought into the Orchard by the Damosell, and by one of the Nunnes, hee put himselfe nere the mouth of this hole, where hee stayed not long before the old trot came forth, and quickly popt in againe seeing the English Prince before her eyes: who was not slow to follow her in, when she casting her armes about his necke, by no force or strength soeuer that he could employ, hee could neuer stay her nor once lose her from him: but still the further he went in, so much more did his labour & paine increase and torment him: for that finding the farther he was in, the way more darke and obscure, it seemed vnto him that some bodie stroke him on euery side, pushing him backewards to make him recoyle: But hee who was magnanimous, enduring this paine, thumping and thrusting, without euer letting goe the old trot, came at the last into a great Pallace very sumptuously wrought and set forth. Then the old woman crying for ayde, there came a Knight vppon him verye richlie Armed, bearing a Shield vppon his arme, whereon were painted two Damsels, whereof the one which appeared very beautifull, held betweene her handes a hart wounded, which the other that had a vaile vppon her face, made semblant to take away from her by force.

Prince

Helpe me then cried the old woman, in presenting him the sworde, against this Knight who will take from mee by force the rarest Iewell in this worlde, which hee is not worthie so much as to looke vppon. Whereuppon he began to speake vnto the Prince in this manner.

Knight let that good Lady alone to deale with me, who hoping to chastice you quickly for this great presumption by which you haue beene so hardy and bolde as to enter within this place in despite of me. I am verie glad quoth Prince Edward to haue to doe with thee, seeing the small honour a man may purchase to vanquish women being but feeble creatures by nature, and of small resistance.

After these speeches they begunne a terrible skirmish, in the which albeit the Prince charged his enemie with many fell & strange knocks, for the ardent zeale hee had to finish this aduenture; his aduersarie nevertheless hauing in his hande the best sword which was to be founde in the circute of the earth, deliuered fewe blowes but made the maile of his harnesse or shield vpon his arme flie in peeces: By reason whereof Prince Edward seeing his life in euident perrill (knowing not well what to doe) resolued to put this Battaile in hazarde to that couring himselfe as well as he could with his buckler, he cared not to endure two or three blowes of his enemie to come to gripes. Which he did when the Knight which founde himselfe a little wearie, hauing not strength enough to holde tug with him, was constrained to fall with him to the grounde: where it fell out so well on the English Knightes side that he was vppermost, Notwithstanding being out of breath, hee could hardlie withdraw himselfe from his aduersarie. Who by reason of his lumpish & beastie fall, founded vnder the Prince, who seeing him in that passion would not wrong him further, than to cease vppon his sworde: then looking rounde about him, hee perceiued at that instant how the old woman vanished away behinde a little wan dore.

He resolued to follow her, to know what might be the purslute of this aduenture, seeing by the cleare brightnesse of a

cleare glasse windowe some light within the next Chamber, which did prouoke him the rather : vppon this occasion clapping on the vanquished knights Armes to play the surest part, they fitted him so iust as if they had bin forged for his backe: Moreouer he take his shield which he beganne to beare with great admiration and seeing after wards his force and courage to encrease double, entred without feare into the next roome: In the middest whereof he was a ware of a faire Sepulcher of Marble, whose couering was so high and so much seperated from the sides, that a man might easily behold all that was within.

In this place hee heard some body make such a fearefull noyse, that approching softly nere it to know what strange matter it might bee, he sawe two armed Knights, who being couched flat vpon their bellies did cruelly wound one another with daggers which each one of them helde betweene their handes. Whereupon hauing compassion of so much blood inhumanely spilt vnder them, by the wounds which they gaue themselues without ceasing, remained a while perplexed what he should best doo in so tragicall a spectacle. In fine, beseeching the diuine prouidence to aide him to pacifie them, he pulled the couering of the Sepulcher off with such a violence, that it remained vncouered: which of a truth had neuer any other Knight beene able to doo but he of Primaleon who was more valiant than himselfe. The two Knights seeing the beauy Marble chappowne downe, which had a long time kept them locked fast in that Sepulcher, rose vpon their feete incontinent, and after they were come forth, they cast themselues downe, at Prince Edwards feete, saying; Behold heere the incomprehensible goodnes of God who hath endowed you with such prowesse and magnanimity, which deliuereth vs now at the last from this intollerable martyrdome which we both did endure; the which we know right well could neuer be brought to ende, but by the vertue of the best Knight who was euer borne in the house of England, and the one of them proceeding said,

Knowe

Know faire Lorde, it is a long time that wee were in this paine, & that we descend of the most Royal blood of the English Nation, as I will recount vnto you, seeing you haue deliuered vs out of this torment.

At this strange accident the Prince much mervailed, especially for that these two personages as soone as they were out of the Sepulcher had receaued the perfect healing of their woundes, and that of so cruell enemies, they were so soone become peaceable friends: so that taking them both by the hands, hee made them stande vp saying; my deare brethren, happy may I tearme my selfe at this present, to haue freed you from this mortall passion, offering my selfe beside to pursue your entier deliuerance, if peraduenture any further encumbrance molest you: Likewise to continue your perpetuall friend in all places where you shall know my small power may stand you in any steede, beseeching you to make relation to me of your hard aduenture, the History whereof I would willingly enioy

Then began one of them; we are brethren, and sonnes to the Duke of North-wales, and to the sister of the King Prince Edward; in the house of whom (for he loued vs both as his owne children) we were brought vp from our infancie. But afterwards as our euill fortune would, knowing nothing one of anothers loue, wee were both enamoured onely by the fame and renowne of the Duke of Borlaes Daughter, esteemed at that time the fayrest and most vertuous Lady of the westerne world. Now in a Tourney being holde at a certaine time in preheminence of her at this Dukes principall Pallace, we purposed both to bee present at it in good equipage of furnitures, to the ende the better to enter in grace of this Princesse: So that her father (being a wise and learned Magitian) knowing our nerenes of lignage with the King, entertained vs most honourably into his house: And after that we had seene the Damosell in face, the flame which from day to day consumed the force and vigour of our vitall spirites did augment in such strange manner, that had not the hope beene

which led vs with future fruition of ease, wee had made both some lamentable and tragicall ende; beeing ignorant one of anothers pursute, and adulsing it for the best, neuer to make priuy to one another of our loues. Both of vs perfourmed maruelous feates in this Tourney to incline this Princesse to loue vs the more: wherein I exceeded my brother, because I was his elder by byrth: So that hauing by this meanes more opportunity to speake vnto her, I made her priuy to my desire, whereupon there succeeded such a conclusion betweene vs, that shee assured mee to bee content to accept mee for her husband: Then I aduentured my selfe to speake vnto the Duke her father, who answered mee, hee had already promised her to the Earle of Brabant: Which answere made me in such a rage, that I had almost run mad for spight.

Neuertheless, for the last refuge which I hoped to finde in this my frenzy, I prayd the Damosell to heare mee a word or two in secret: Whereunto she answered me, that I should come the very same euening into her Chamber by a little doore which was seldome times opened, where shee would bee to heare what I would say vnto her.

The appointed houre being come, I would in no wise permit so good opportunity to slip my hands, without reaping that sweete frute which might restore the heart, for the which all other liquor seemed gall and bitternesse: But some claiping on mine Armes, I went straight to the doore with my priuy watchword, in the most secret wise which might be possible. Yet I could not carry my selfe thither so well, but my brother who began to mistrust my drift (as it falleth out sundry times, iealousie causeth to coniecture thinges which haue small appearance of truth) so that hee arming himselfe in like manner, came slily to the very place where I staide for the opening of the doore; and without making himselfe knowne vnto me, began to let drive at me, saying he would take order I should neuer attaine that whereunto I did aspire.

Then seeing to defend my selfe whether I would or not, I must needes in that extremity put my selfe in deuoyre as well

as I could; and in the meane time the Duke who heard our coyle, ran vnto vs with many of his seruants, exclaiming in a great rage: How now disloyall knights, goe yee about to dishonour mee with so great an infamie? By the liuing God I shall make you dearely buy this so great presumption. Hee presently working by his Art of Negromancie, made vs both remaine as deade at the very instant: and beeing in this traunce sodainely transported into this place, hee enclosed vs fast within the Sepulcher, with this assurance of wordes; yee combat to dishonour mee and my Daughter, well continue hardly your battell, till a Knight of your race may by his generous courage come to part you.

When he had thus said, he banished from our presence, and we remained there in a wonderfull rage, striking one at an other; as you haue seene euen vnto this present, so that wee know not how long this deadly quarrel and malice betweene vs hath lasted: and the extreamest point of the disaster vnto which this sorcerie did binde vs was in that wee could not dye by any of those stabbes and woundes which wee receaued one of another.

Maruelous thinges are those which you tell mee quoth the Prince, and know that it is nowe a long time since the Duke inchaunted you heere, because Prince Edward of whome yee speake, was my great Grandfather: Neuertheless, let vs depart out of this place to goe a while some whether else to refresh vs all three together: And as he set his foote vpon the threshold of the doore of this Chamber, he spied an old woman which thus bespake him.

Faire Knight, long time before you were borne, did the Duke of Borsa knowe by meane of his knowledge your valour and magnanimity, and how you should finish this aduenture: therefore left you the sword which you haue gotten, and keepe it well as being of that vertue as I assure you hath few fellowes at this day, especially for as much as if you shall hold it in your right hand, no enchauntment shall euer be able to hurt you.

An

In like manner is the shield which you haue there wonne most woonderfull and most rare, for that you shall see the discourses of all your life pourtrayed out most lively therein: the which not withstanding you shall neuer know but by lapse of time, following the destenie, whereunto God submitted you euen from your birth day: so that hauing now accomplished that which was by great learning foreséene & directed in this aduenture you may goe hence, when it shall séeme good vnto you: And for that the two Knights who goe with you, cannot long time remayne in this woorld; counsaile and admonish them to remember the mercie of God, who by his diuine grace hath giuen you power to deliuer them from the misery and calamity wherein they haue remayned this hundred yeares last past.

The old woman hauing spoken thus much vanished away, whereat the Prince was amazed, when making far greater account of the sworde and shield than he did before, hee departed out at the doore with his companions: And séeing no more the Pallace wherein hee had fought with the Knight of the Caue, nor the Armes which were giuen him at the Monastere, his admiration was much more redoubled: Yet as hee came backe hee founde the way to be verie darke and obscure, which as hee came was as cleare & lightsome, as at the mouth of the hole; where being arriued they got out easily without any disturbance, and from thence forth was it for euer shut vp, the Pallace resolued into smooke, and all the enchauntments thereof vndone and brought to finall end.

Afterwards walking together towardes the Gardengate, there met them the Abbesse and her Nunnes, who entertayned the Prince with ioy and the greatest gratulation that might bee, maruelling much at the two companions whome hee brought with him: which caused the Abbesse to demande who they were, and who had giuen him the rich Armes shee saw him bring on his backe out of the Caue.

Madame quoth hee, these two Gentlemen say they are two Brethren and Knights descended of noble race, who by the great

great skill of the Duke of Borsa, were enclosed fast in the place from whence I have nowe delivered them out of a torment farre worse than the cruellest torture which they might endure. The Armes which you see, I have conquered from a Knight, who would have kept from mee the entrance of a Pallace, where combating with him upon that refusall, I changed mine Armes, being hewed and peece meale broken for these which you see; but to speede thereof will I leave you my sword, for a testemony of the affection I have to give you far greater thinges when the time shall come: for that sworde which I have gotten of the old woman will I carry with mee unto the Kings Court, whether I hope by the helpe of God speedily to conduct these Knights.

That may you not well do quoth the Damosell who guided him into this place, before you accomplish first that which you have already promised me: Well may these two Knights in the meane time in this place attende your returne, which will be in very short space as I hope.

Prince Edward answered he would goe with her willingly, into what place soever it should please her to bring him: Nevertheless, being already late in the evening, they departed not that night out of the Monastery: Where the Lady Abbesse and her sisters could not satisfie themselves to feast the Prince and the two Knights, the which at their instant prayer, made once more unto them the whole discourse of their history, after that they had all supped most daintily.

The morrow morning Prince Edward rose at the point of day-breake and departed alone with the Damosell, leaving the two brethren among the Nunnes in the Convent, where the Abbesse made them good cheare for his sake, and kept very carefully the sworde which he gave her, wherevppon it fortuned afterward that he being King, he augmented much the revenues of this Nunnerie, remembring the promise which hee had made to the Abbesse, and to all the religious Nunnes her sisters.

How

CHAP. XX.

How Prince *Edward* was brought by the Damosell into the house of the Duke of *Borsa*, where her sister thought to enchaunt him to make him marry a Niece of hers being Daughter to the Duke, who was inamoured of him, onely by the great fame which was bruted of his valour, and what ensued thereupon.

THis Damsell who guided the English Prince, wayted in the house of the Duke of Borsa, Prophetwe to her. for whom her father enchaunted the two brathren within the Sepulcher: the which was afterward married with the Earle of Brabant, unto whom he had promised her, as ye have read before.

But this Duke had onely one sonne and one Daughter which was his eldest, excelling farre in beauty all others of that country, for which cause, his father loved her a great deale the dearer: so that more carefully to have her nurtured in all feminine civility, hee caused her to bee brought up in the house of a sister of his being a widdow, a most prudent Lady, beeing well adviced and verye well seene in the Arte of Magicke and secret Philosophie, a Profession very peculiar to the most part of their familie.

This Dukes Daughter called Rene, hearing the famous report of the generous valour of Prince Edward, so publikely talked of in the mouth of all men, fell so farre in love with him without ever seeing him, that she became inwardly pensive and melancholy: and by reason of the continuall teares and complaints which without ceasing shee powred out to the winde, when she could secretly retire her selfe into her Chamber apart, to ease the passion of her minde a little, that it defaced her beauty in fewe dayes, that the Duke her father was aware thereof.

Where-

Whereupon seeing her sometimes to fetch deepe sighes, deerely requested his sister (for he loued his Daughter entirely) to sound by some subtle meanes from whence this her melancholly sadnes might proceede.

Whereunto the good Lady made reply, how she had not as yet perceiued any such matter, notwithstanding she woulde worke so wisely, that she woulde learne the truth. And from thence going streit to her Neeces Chamber, she found her continuing her daily complaints: So that sitting downe by her, she began to pray and to coniure her, that she would no longer conceale from her the cause of her griefe: then the young Damsell with a bashfull and blushing countenance answered her with these words.

Madame, I knowe not what to answere you in this case, but that I am the most wicked and most disastred Damosell that was euer borne vnder the celestiall Sphæres, seing that I haue imprinted in my heart a thing which redoundeth more to my totall ruine, than to the least tast of any contentment, whose time shall be my speedy death which shall bring an ende to my detestable and so to long liuing life. Then she proceeded to tell how she loued with a most vehement affection flame Prince Edward of England, who would be the onely cause that she shoulde speedily see her selfe disclued to dust and ashes; forasmuch it is men altogether impossible, euer to haue any fruition of her desire, because the Prince and she were not of equall estates. The Aunt who saw her in such a pitifull taking, would not prolong her further torment, but presently began thus vnto her. Deare Neece, I pray you gouern your selfe with some constancie of minde in this passion, and in the meane time. Driue out of your minde this impossibilitie, which you alledge for the principal point of your anguish: for I promise you so to imploye my Art, that the Knight (who will loue you ere long, more than any liuing creature,) shall arriue in this place to espouse you: So great and vnspeakable was the ioy of Rene, that taking her Aunt about the necke, she embraced and kissed her many times saying.

O my swete Aunt, if you procure me now this little and felicitie (inferiour to none in this world) you may well vaunt, and say you haue deliuered a sore wofull and desolate Prince out of the most intricate Labyrinth which euer was deuised in this earth, yea, if it were that which Dedalus inuented so artificially in Creta, to include the insatiable Minotaure.

My louing Niece, take you no care (replied the Lady) but haue a little patience that all things may be done in their due time. With that shee departed from the Chamber to conferre this business with the Duke her brother, without whose priuy consent she would in no wise begin to set this worke abroach: and discoursing to him at large the whole matter, told him what hope shee had to carrie this businesse so circumspectly, that ere long Prince Edward should wed his daughter: so that after their conclusion, she went to turne ouer his bookes of Negromancie, where she found that the Knight was sore in loue already of Gridonia: Notwithstanding hoping to crosse and reuoke his affection by her Magicke, shee dispatcht away immediatly the Damosell of whome you haue vnderstood before, to bring him vnto Borsa: True it is, shee commanded her not to leade him vnto the aduenture of the Cloyster, but thether she conducted him her selfe, because of a sister of hers who was a Nunne in that place, from whence departing together as ye haue read before in the former Chapter, in two dayes he arriued at the Citty of Borsa: But before the Knight did enter into the Citty, the Damosell prayed him to stay for her a while in a Hermitage neere the Suburbes, till shee returned from doing a message to her Sister, who was very willing to do it: And abiding with the Hermit, shee went to the Infant Rene, who right glad of his arriuall, trickt by her selfe most richly to entertaine her Louer, sending backe with speede the messenger to conduct him secretely into her Chamber.

Shee being quickly arriued at the Hermitage sayth thus to the Knight, Sir you must leaue your horse here, and come on

swete

sote with me, who will bring you into a place, whether you shall finde your selfe a glad man to be arriued.

I pray God guard the Prince then, that I be not deceiued nor circumuented by you in any thing.

Alas! That God whom you haue inuocated forbid, that I should euer serue to entrap my Liege and soueraigne in any Ambush; I pray you onely come with mee assuredly, and without any feare of ill encounter, upon condition (if it shall fall out otherwise by my meane) I will bee reputed the most false and disloyall woman that euer guided Knight into any vnknowne place.

Being put in this assurance of sauegard by his guide, hee went on fayre and softly his pace by that false gate (before which the two brethren long since fell together by the eares) euen till hee came within the Chamber of Rene: where as soone as they were entred, quickly was the doore well barred. Whereupon by fortune Prince Edward called to minde that which appeared vnto him in the wood, and moreouer that which the old woman foretold him touching the vertue of his sword.

By meanes whereof, mistrusting some inchauntment, hee speedily set his hand vpon it; and then marched towardes the Infant, which he saw so beautifull and so pompously attired, that any Knight would haue taken great pleasure in her sight onelie: And for hee came without his Helmet on his heade, with so magnificent and rich Armour vppon his backe, hee pleased the Damosell so much, that rising vp from her seate shee came to prostrate her selfe at his feete, saying.

Prince Edward, in truth I was out of hope with my selfe, that the heauens would fauour me so much, as to make these mine eies beholde you, which haue shed so many teares to deplore my future calamitie; if it please not you to succour mee? Whereby my hart hath beene by an impatient desire prouoked to rage and reclaime against fortune, which hauing bestowne your renowne vnto mine eares, would frustrate my sight of so rare a creature.

Notwithstanding, nowe my luche is so prosperous, as to make me the happiest Damsell of all Europe, seeing the paine you take to visit mee, I perceiue well that not without great reason it hath made mee altogether the slaue and captiue of your loue.

The knight greatly marualling no lesse at the singuler beauty of this Damsell, than to heare her vse such eloquent and cunning tearmes, take her by the hande to lift her from the grounde, and to seate her in her chaire againe, neere vnto which, the Damsell who was the messenger before, hauing already set another, the infant caused the Prince to sit downe hard by her side, reentring the former talke with this instance.

Faire Lorde, knowe yee I am Daughter to the Duke of Borsa, one of your most faithfull vassals, who hearing the mute of your generous actions, on euery side published round about vs, began so extreamely to loue you, that I forgat the very zeale which I bare vnto my selfe: Whereof shall bee a good testemony the extreame passions which you shall vnderstand do daily debilitate my life that dependeth onely but vpon your humanity: the which I hope to finde so pittifull towardes me, that it shall haue compassion of the grieuous anguishes, which without intermission do martyr mee with more painefull torment than that which king Phalaris caused Perillus to endure within the brasen Bull, which he himselfe inuented for the cruell torturing of others. And you may well thinke faire Prince, I could not in any other knight of base condition haue knowne howe to ground so much hope as I haue nowe in you, and therefore I pray you to haue regard to the reason and carriage of all good and sounde iudgement.

Madame, replied the Prince, I could not imagine the meane to exempt from you the recognizance wherein I find my selfe bounden to you, considering the good will, which of your grace you beare me without any merit of my part: Neuerthelesse, if death do not preuent the affection which I haue to shewe

you

you howe it is not to an vngratefull person, or one of small power to whom you addresse your selfe, I will vse such munificence and liberalitie toward us you and your father, that you shall haue chiefest cause of any liuing in this kingdome to giue me thankes.

And beleeue mee (sweete Ladie) if I had knowne your will (setting apart all mine owne affaires) I had come vnto you to do you all the seruice I could possibly haue deuised; yet not with intent to obtaine of you any thing which might staine your honour, or abate that vertue which I see shining in you, as doth Virgo the maiden signe in the Zodiacke of the heauens: For so much as therunto could be neuer consent who shall thinke himselfe all his life time to be your loyall and obedient seruant. Thus much I say, because I may not haue you in marriage to be my wife, my hart being bowed to another place.

Albeit, to assure you of my sincere and true deuotion towards you, there is nothing so difficult or harde to bee accomplished, which it shall please you to commaund me, but I will execute most willingly, in the best sort which I may or shall be able to deuise.

Iudge ye whether the Ladie were perplexed and greatly troubled in her minde or no, hearing the resolution of the Knight (whose minde was onely fixed and established on Grodonia) for so much as her very speech which she lost for a while, shewed euidently a most true and perfect token of her sufferance.

Which her Aunt perceiuing, who in the meane time employed her best skill to bring her in grace with the Prince, was sore displeased to see her in such a swoune.

Knowing also that she laboured in vaine, by reason of the sword which he got in the Caue, shee came into the Chamber where they were together saying.

Prince Edward, so honourable are the heauens vnto you, that they will happily conduct you to the ende of all your enterprises, except of that one which you haue so liuelie now im-

printed

printed in your breast. For the Lady which you purpose to serue with infinite paines and trauels, is long since dedicated to a more accomplished Knight than your selfe: So that as I thinke you should doe well to leaue that way which shall bee so hard for you to keepe, to take this which hath no difficultie nor disturbance in it.

That cannot I do by mine owne consent quoth the Prince, hauing already surrendred the conquest of my libertie into a place, whence when I would, I cannot well call it backe at my pleasure: Wherefore I beseech you of all fauour make me vnderstand so much as I perceaue you knowe, and withall who shall be that so fortunate Knight who shall go before mee in the fruition of the Princesse Gridonia. Nay seeing you haue no pittie (replyed the Inchauntres) of this faire Lady whome you see almost breathlesse in your presence, I am not purposed to tell you things wherein you may take delight, but rather not to prolong my selfe in sorrowes seeing you before mine eies. I will presently depart out of this Chamber: with that shee went her wayes, leauing the poore louer in a Sea of teares, continuing her exclamations with lamentable sighes, thinking to moue her Narcissus to some compassion: But he who cared little for these fantasies, supposing what was said of Gridonia, was spoken onely to winne him from her loue, he comforted the Damsell as well as he could, telling her how hee would conferre with her Father, and if hee would consent thereunto, hee would come thither ere it were long to marrie her.

In the meane time her Aunt went to speake with the Duke her Father, with whome (after shee had giuen him to vnderstand that her knowledge was sufficient to worke Prince Edward to this passe, she aduised him to go accompanied with twenty Knights Armed into his Daughters chamber: Where hauing himselfe ignorant of the matter, and shewing himselfe fore displeased against them both, he should seaze vppon his body and put him in prison, and so they might worke their matters as they listed.

The

The Duke then putting in practise his stratagem, came with twenty men all in Masks into the chamber where Archas in bed entred all alone, making many solemn signes of recognition, began thus to say.

Alas my God what a happiness and joy shall I make him I awake, or his Tyranning behaviour shall I speake? Ah! I should have thought to have had a vertuous friend and child mother to my Daughter, more faithfull and constant, than any other in their Mothers Regions, and only am I frustrated of mine opinion: for I am before mine eyes by his meere vitious and corrupt thirst over into a remembrance of Messalina. Truely I may well waive my love to make them both dye in prison by the most cruell torment that may be inuented, seeing they have shamefully betrayed me and all my posterity.

Enter then and come in my knights to lay hands vppon this murthering villaine, to the end I may heare of him and who hath counselled him to enter so traytorously into my house, for all those who are culpable and in any sort consenting in this misdeede, I shall make them pay dearely for it by a cruell and miserable death, and all children of their house. Which when Archas heard, he started out of his bed to get his Cimeter, who having come in, his striking animate was terrible the English Prince, who setting hand to his sword with an inuincible resolution putting his shield on his arme, awaited them stout.

Come now hardy boys have every one to you, and I shall shew him, whether he can better play his part against him, seeke he to offend in regard of my estate, I pretend not to be traytor: but I assure you not the Duke could come to his ende with such valour, though that from all antiquity this house hath had a reputation of treacherous murders and false practises. But if such treason be betweene a Knight who most gallantly fighting hath a fine blame, that the most part posterity will deeme a shaming like murther of the Lords both all his whole length: then albeit he hath his head couered, yet for all that he shall not such valour, and feare shame so fortunate, that he shall neuer murther them all, but not the Duke after gaue

to worke with her magicke spels as you shall heare? She hath darkened all the light of the Chamber, making a sulphurous and obscure ayre more darke than hell it selfe, in this therof: then delivering forth the Knights with the Infanta (who would willingly have him in his place who was dead) she shut Prince Edward fast within the Chamber until the morrow morning when she saw seven of the Dukes Squiers lying along on the ground one slaine outright, and other five sore wounded. Now could not the Duke tell what it were best to do with him; because if he should deliver him, it seemed to him, but to hasten to shamefull a death for himselfe, and if hee should keepe him any longer in his house, it should but encourage him to forethinke all meanes to put him to more cruell torment; so that he passed the night in this conflict, until the morrow morning when an auncient Knight reprehending him sharpely because he suffered himselfe to be governed by women, counselled him to cause Prince Edward to bee secretly conveyed out of his house by the same Damosell which guided him thither.

The Duke who liked well of this advise, called the Damosell who had beene the messenger to come before him, unto whom after he had shewed some signes of great heavines, he gave this speech.

It greeveth me much, that my sisters pretence hath not succeeded to so good effect as she expected, and for so much as you are the cause, having conducted the Knight into the adventure of the Cloyster, where hee hath conquered such a Damell which safe-gardeth him from all her enchantments, needs must you your selfe get him by subtle meanes from hence, saying you onely have meanes to save his life; and for you should thinke your selfe greatly culpable of his death, if it should chance so happen, upon the assurance which you gave him bringing him into my house, you will willingly set him free from house into the fields, if hee will promise you never to seeke any revenge of the Duke, nor of any of his family.

Hereunto willingly condescended the Damosell, when departing

parting from the Duke, trembling like an Aspen leafe, they came to the Chamber where Prince Edward was, who standing already with his sword drawne in his hand to encounter them who would come against him: She prostrating her selfe before him, with the teares in her eyes, beginneth thus the tenour of her speech.

Sayre Prince, great is the occasion which I have now to complaine of fortune, for I having brought you into this house under a pretext of the extreame love which my Cosin beareth you, they have vented a sparke and most shameful death for us all three: for you especially whome the Duke hath surprised with his Daughter, whom albeit he should pardon the intentions of the rest, which here surrounds falsely to have beene accustomed with some such, as the like transgressions are wont of such as his Peeres, the Daughter of Cato hath set the brand of the death of her husband Brutus. Behold we now may well thinke, my Lord the Duke assembling of the causes of this occurrence, as he presently giveth signes to be most easily finding out at last my wicked practise (which I protest before God I never went about to carry to any evill end) I shall be most sharply punished of us all three: Nevertheless yet I hope, will I not mistake (as being the person of this Trinity which knowes I have best deserved, as well I know I must die for it) to employ my self in some subtile inventions to make us escape this imminent perill, so that ye will assure me never to seeke any revenge for the offence which hath here offered you in this place: Wherefore I beseech you Sayre Lady, most humbly to graunt me generall remission, to the end that declaring it to the Duke at the article of my death, hee may be moved to compassion to pardon me also himselfe; and this is the meanes whereby wee may peradventure save our lives from the mortall punishment which they prepare for us every day. So well knew the Damsell to colour her speeches, that she wonne the mercy of the Prince, who answered her thus.

Sayre maiden for the love of Rene, who hardly meriteth much

much more at my handes, I haue willingly pardoned this iniurie to the Duke and to all his familie, albeit it is one the most vilest touch and outrage which might bee offered to any Knight; And albeit the death which they determine to make vs die, be horrible and cruell, yet I thinke take mine in very good part, if I might execute vpon those varlets who would lay hands on me, such a massacre as they deserue: Nenertheless seeing the occasion presents it selfe, to auoyd this scandall I am content to follow it, so that no greater damnage may ensue. Ah my Lord replied the Damsell, I giue you leaue to shew your force on me the very first of all, if euer I bring you into any further perill, with that shee kist his hande, and letting him forth by the same doore hee came in at, shee conducted him to the Hermitage, where taking leaue one of another, the Knight take his way toward the Cloister, being most ioyfull of the vertue of his sword which he had purchased there; but very sorrowfull and pensiue for the wordes which the Dukes sister told him, which dee also had by some reuelation to the Passage of the figures painted vpon his shield.

Afterwardes being arriued at the Abbey, after the entertainments and welcommings accustomed, taking the two Knights whom he had deliuered along with him in company, he returned straight vnto the Court of the King his father, who for that hee could heare no newes of him was in great heauines and melancholly, the which at his arriuall was all changed into extreame ioy and gladnes, when embracing him, he thus began to welcome him.

My deare sonne, I cannot sufficiently wonder how ye departed without making me any thing at all priuy to your intent. My Lord and father (answered the young Prince) I beseech you to pardon me, for so much as I was forced soe against my will so to do; and then hee recounted vnto him the bauado of the Damsell in the woode, who carried him afterwards to proue his valour in the aduenture of the Sumpter, where hee deliuered alle these two with the whole discourse of their History.

Where,

Whereat all those who heard him wondred greatly: and especially the King his father, who being filled with an vnspeakeable ioy, welcommed them in the best manner vnto his Court, and with kinde speeches embraced them, whereby they thanking him in most humble manner, bowed themselues were low to kisse his hand: so that after this Royall entertainment they had great honor done them by al those of the Court: who could not be satisfied with beholding them, but did extoll vnto the heauens the inuincible valour of their deliuerer.

The Duke of North-Wales the verie same who was at that time Successor to their Father, came to visite them as his nereest kinsmen, with many other Knights and Lordes of his blood, whereof they were wonderfull ioyfull, especially to see themselues in the place where they were brought vp in their tender age, and yet not knowing any one body of all those whome they beheld there.

And after they had made some abode in this Court for the loue of the King and of Prince Edward his Sonne, so soone as he departed they went their waies also to seeke themselues religious men within the Monastery of the Cane, where they bowed the first all resolue of their liues vnto the seruice of God. The King and all the great Lordes of his Court, beheld with much admiration the rich sworde, and all the rest of the Princes Armes, esteeming the knowledge of the ancient Duke of Borsa to be most wonderfull, who had inuented so cunning matters in his house: where to returne to the Infant Rene, after shee saw her hope desperate, shee besought her Father to make her a Nunne in the Monastery which had beene cause of her disaster, protesting neuer to loue any other Knight but her: Whereunto her Father easily condescended, because this Abbie was within the Country vnder his obedience, and long since founded by his auncestors.

In this place the Damsell liuing at her great ease, felt euerie day more and more some accesse of the languishing passion which shee indured for her deare and perfect friend Prince Edward: who after hee was Crowned King of England,

knowing of the austere life she lead after his refusall, came to see her as farre as the Conuent was from him, where hee bestowed great riches on it, for the loue of her and of the Pucelle, who by meanes of his sword which he left there, remembred his promise,

The English Prince then being greatly esteemed of his Father, and of all the Lordes and Barrons of his Realme, did made small account of that reputation, for that his spirit was rather occupied to seeke out the meanes how he might secretly depart to goe followe straunge aduentures, by the which hee might finde out her, whom hee loued more entirely than himselfe.

In the meane time, hee toke his chiefest delight, to visite many times her image and representation, vnto the which he discoursed and recounted the extreame affection he bare her, as if he had beene in presence of the liuing creature; and by this meane toke he some comfort, when vppon a day fortune presented before his eyes a fit opportunity to depart, and to goe into any part of the world, whether so euer he desired, which was in this manner.

When he was walking vpon the bankes of the Thames neere London he spied a vessell laden with merchandize arriue, which a rich Merchant of Hungarie accompanied with diuers others had laden together to sell and to traffique; by whom vnderstanding whence the ship was (for he knew long before howe the Duchy of Ormeda bordered vpon the kingdome of Hungarie) aduised himselfe that hee might secretely depart with this ship, when it should bee ready to set saple towards the North.

By this occasion beeing returned into his Chamber (purposing to get his equipage in a readines) calleth aside a Page of his who was very faithfull named Clawde, of whom hee demaunded if hee knewe not the Master of the shippe with whom he had spoken: Who made answere he did: then hee tolde him further, howe hee must needes make a voyage into Hungarie, and to Constantinople, about matters of great impor-

importance: And because this shippe sayled directly into those Countries, he commaunded him to certefie the Pilot how a knight who desired to passe into Hungarie, would giue him willingly what he would demaund, if hee would speedily make for those parts.

The Prince made no creature priuy to his departure, for that he meant to carry no more company along with him, but his man Clawde only and Maiortes for to make him passtime by the way.

Claudius hauing thoroughly vnderstood his Masters mind, went incontinent straitt to the Hauen, where hee concluded with the Master for the time of their embarkement; and deliuering him a good summe of money to prouide necessary furnitures, returned backe to his Lord and told him all, who was very ioyfull of this opportunity. And as secretly as hee could by night time he caused his Armes to be carried a boorde the shippe, with such few prouisions as were necessary for this voyage; and after that the Marchant had made good traffiche of all his merchandize, Prince Edward embarked himselfe with his man Clawde, and his Dogge Maiortes onely.

The King and the Queene missing Prince Edward at his vprising, as he was accustomed to salute them, were in great heauines for him, and yet supposing he had but absented himselfe from the Court for a while, they comforted themselues herein, being well assured wheresoeuer he was in the worlde, he would make his valour and prowesse be knowne. Neuertheless, commaunding to seeke for him throughout their whole Kingdome, where being not heard off, they supposed he was trauelled into some farre straunge Climate, wherefore they prayed deuoutly vnto the diuine Maiesty, that it would preserue him from all misfortune and distresse.

How

CHAP. XXI.

How Prince *Edward* saylyng towards the Coast of *Hungarie*, hee tooke within a ship of *Mores* which assailed him *Zerphira* Daughter to the Soldan of *Persia*, whom he sent to dwell with the faire *Gridonia*, and of her entertainement when she came at the *Clowes-Rocke* where *Gridonia* dwelt.

Prince Edward sailing in the North sea, concealed himselfe as much as hee possibly might, lest he should bee descried of any: but comming to surge neere the Coast of Hungarie, there rose a contrary winde to the course they held, so that they were constrained to strike all their sailes; and their ship fell going lower daies at the mercie and furie of the tempest. The first day that the tempest began to cease, and the sea began to be calme, they discovered a farre off floating a Brigantine of Mores, within which was Zerphira Daughter to the Soldan of Persia, and to the faire Princesse Zerphira, by whom the Emperour Palmerin loued so tenderly in his young yeares.

This Infant being sister to Lechesin, for her rare and great beauty was demanded in mariage by the king of India, unto whom the Soldan sent her with wonderfull and infinite riches, being accompanied with the brother of the said king of India, a most magnanimious and valiant knight, who came into Persia to captinate the articles of this mariage. But as the storme and tempest had parted all his other vessels, came alone tossed to and fro with the huge waues, when he descried the Hungarians to be Christians: Whereupon commanding his Pilots they should put forth all their cloth to fetch in their ship, who grappeld with them ere long afterward: For all his Mariners were very expert in sea affaires, and especially in Piracie, as having beene all for the most part chosen out of the cunningest Rouers and Pirats which might be found out.

The Merchants who perceiued by the flags and pendents

of their vessell, that they were infidels, beganne to cry out for ayde: whereupon the Prince who heard that noyse, laceth his helmet incontinent, and mounted upon the hatches, where he found many Gotes who had already taken his Partiners.

When hee knewe they were Miscreants, (his courage rising at an instant was redoubled in valour) hee began to lay upon them so courageously who presented themselues to the battell, that with the first blow he charged with his good sword he sent one into the other world, saying in a great rage; If it please the almighty to haue pitty on vs this day, I hope you shall not make vs so many prisoners nor slaues as ye were a t the least it will cost some of you derre before ye bring our fete into the chaines.

Which the brother of the Indian King perceiuing, for that he entred first the shippe, came upon him with a great bauery whom the English Prince receiued with some thwart flashes of his sworde: and beginning to driue one another in furious manner, for that Prince Edward was more nimble and better skilled than the Gaze, putting him out of paine to receiue the triumphant crowne of his sea-victory, hee made him speedily goe giue account of his Paganisme before the hellish Lucifer: For whome the other Knights of his sect seeing very weary and sorrowful, came assaulting him in round about to lay upon him on all sides more easily at their aduantage.

When the English Prince knowing hee must either dye shamefully, or defende himselfe from these miscreants, spared none of his forces; but like vnto a Wolf assailed with many Mastiues, did so driue them all before him, that not one euer could approach him, but hee made him feele the smart of his sword, remayning dead or wounded, or els forced to lye affonied on the ground: which his good Dogge Maiortes perceiuing came upon them to teare them in pieces, or els to make them vaylond in the middest of the sea.

The Marchants who thought themselues vtterly vndone, seeing at the first encounter how valiantly Prince Edward behaued himselfe against his aduersaries, came to Armes to succour

succour him; by meanes whereof they shewed such valour, that within a small while there remayned not a Pyze within Zerphiraes Barke, who passed not the edge of the sword, and was incontinent throwen headlong into the waues of the sea, which happened to none of the Christians.

Prince Edward and some few of the Merchants were hurt a little, but had no dangerous nor mortall wound.

Afterward, the Knight and the Master of the shippe being entred into the Pyzes Brigandine, they found within a Cabbin neere vnto the bottome of the vessell the Infant Zerphira, most sumptuously attyred with twenty other Damosels, powring forth many straunge and lamentable complaintes, where aboue the rest one might easily heare the young Princesse, as her amongst them all, whom the disaster of this conflict touched nerest.

Neuertheless Prince Edward had no sooner espied her, but he iudged the Lady to be issued of great blood, and to bee Mistresse of the rest, as excelling them all in beauty, and among the brauest shewing her selfe the best equipped, therefore he approched neere to comfort her.

But what? the one vnderstode not the language of the other: for Zerphira besought him to kill her, as hee had done her people; and the Prince intreated her to let him vnderstand something touching her affayres: Whereupon a Marriner (whose life the Knight had saued to vse him for an interpretour, because he could speake diuers languages) answered how she was the Soldan of Persiaes Daughter, who sent her as then to the King of India, who had demaunded her in marriage.

Of this newes was the Prince very ioyfull, especially hearing him say she descended of so illustrious and noble place, for the hope hee had to sende her for a present to Gridonia; in such sort that causing her to bee put in good comfort by the Marriner his Interpretour, hee commaunded him to aduertize her how she was in the power of a Knight, who vpon his life would not permit the least dishonour in the worlde to bee done

done vnto her. And the young Princesse being willing to know whether he were allied to the blood of the Emperour of Constantinople, because shee would willingly haue made an end of her sorrow and griefe, Prince Edward caused her to be answered incontinent, that he was not: Neuertheless shee should not therefore want any thing shee desired, & that he purposed to send her into a place where she shoulde finde her selfe in the greatest content her heart might require.

Ah accursed and vnfortunate that I am cryed she then out, I doubted greatly that fortune would not bee so gentle and so fauourable vnto me, as to make me fall into the hands of any Knight who were issued out of that so noble and generous race of Palmerin de Oliua: Notwithstanding seeing without doubt it is an inevitable extremity, I must patiently yéld my selfe his humble captiue, beseeching God I may finde so much curtesie in him, as once did my mother in the like accident receaue of the so redoubted Prince, Palmerin de Oliua.

Prince Edward afterwardes hauing vnderstoode by the more the interpretation which the Infant had accompanied with so heauy a sigh, he would take the charge of her himselfe, saying to the Master of the shippe, that of all the booty they had taken, he demanded nothing els for his share but this Damsell. So Prince Edward lead away into his Chamber, the Princesse Zerphira with seuen of her principall Damsels onely, who carryed with them theyr rings and iewels, giuing the rest of the pillage to the Merchant and his companions; then proceeding in theyr voyage, the Knight called to minde how there were diuers Christians within his shippe, who did him seruice with great reuerence; wherevpon mistrusting lest they should know him, he take aside a little the Master of the shippe saying thus vnto him; my friend I perceaue you know who I am, whereby men may thinke great simplicity in me to conceale my selfe hereafter: Vnderstand therefore that I departed out of the King my fathers Court, with an vnspeakable desire to come to see as well the good Knights which are in the Court of King Frisol, as also in that of the

Emperour of Constantinople; therefore I must request you not to manifest mee to any one, considering that what I do now is but for some good respect: And to the ende wee may auoyde the inconuenience which might ensue by the enquiry made of mee, you shall do mee hereafter the least honour you can; reputing me but for a simple and poore wandring knight whom you shall call the Knight of the Dogge, and say I am of some farre Nation to you vnknowne, who wandring thorough the world to seeke strange aduentures, and arriuing at the King of Englands Court, soiourned there a while with Prince Edward his sonne; with whome I was so well acquainted, that he would haue kept me there a long time with him; whereby it procedeth that I can better speake that language than any other, yea than mine owne naturall tongue: And if you do so, and God giue mee grace to liue the age of a man, I will reward you so that you shall thinke it a blessed houre, wherein you first met me.

Syr replyed the Merchant, you haue already done me more grace, than I shall euer bee able hereafter to deserue at your hands, which may well assure you, I shall neuer dare disclose you, seeing the great care and diligence you your selfe vse, not to bee descried of any whatsoeuer; and whereas there is others beside in this vessell who knowe you as well as I do, I will make them all come before you to the ende they may promise not to make knowne your name, but when and to whom you shall please.

So it fell out when they arriued afterward with great gladnesse at Arriace, which was the place of the birth and dwelling of the chiefe Merchant who was owner of the ship. Being a Cittie verie strong and of good defence situate in the Kingdome of Hungarie, on the one side confining with the Countries of the Soldan of Nicea. There came they into a Hauen, and for the Merchant was rich and had a fayre lodging, hee tooke the knight with him into his house: who would needes bring along Zerphira with him, leading her by the arme, where they were honourably entertained by the

Merchants

Merchants wife, who at their arrivall understood secretly by meanes of her husband the discourse of this Navigation.

But all those of this ship having purchased by the helpe of the Knight of the Dogge great riches from the Infidels, the bruite thereof came quickly to the eares of this Ladie: who found her selfe at that instant in a woefull case, because King Frisoll went about by his Soveraignety to take from her this Cittie to keepe it, as being the next frontier to the Mores Country: And also because her deceased husband had rebelled in his time against Nerrides his Father, when after the conquest of this Kingdome hee sought to inwest himselfe with the principall Citties, wherein no man gainesaide him, but he onely who died in this revolte.

Under this pretexte then sent King Frisoll for this Lady to come unto him, to dispossesse her of the Cittie, promising nevertheless to recompence her in good sort: But shee who had but one only Sonne, as yet a tender pupill & under age, would not exchange it for any other Cittie of his Kingdome, as well by reason that hers was well seated for all kinde of commodities, as also for that she saw all her subiects and inhabitance growne very rich and wealthy. So that this Lady had no more but eight dayes of termine remayning when she was to appeare before the King, when also Prince Edward arrived at Arriace, and having not as yet found out any that durst appeare to answere for her, so that she waxed very sad seeing in perplexety: knowing not howe to resolue what was best to be done in this case, when she understoode of the prowesse and magnanimitie of the Knight of the Dogge bruted abroad in her Cittie.

Whereupon it hapned that shee sent incontinent for the principall Merchant to come to her Castell, who arrived there some after with two hamnesses of Zerphira, which fell to his share, whereof he made a present unto her, and declared unto her as much as you have read before: wherewith shee had her minde so troubled, that she lost almost both her sence, and reason, and therefore she prayed him to move the Knight

to haue some compassion of her woefull distresse. Whereupon he protesting vnto her of a troth the great curtesie and generousnes of Prince Edward, shee made no farther enquirie; but beeing accompanied with the Marchant with some one of her Damsels, she went presently to him, and falling downe prostrate before him thus she began.

Braue Knight, if the affliction of any poore desolate widdow hath euer found place of pittie in your noble minde, I beseech you most humbly you will now vouchsafe to regard me in the necessitie wherein I am. And after shee had vnfolded the whole matter vnto him, the Prince made her this answere.

Madame I am verie sorie and sore displeased at your sadnesse and cause of melancholie; on the other side I am verie glad that so good an occasion doth offer it selfe now, to make you knowe the desire I haue had euer since mine Infancie, to helpe and succour to my small power all Ladies, who would employ mee, and especially those who feele themselues oppressed, and destitute of aide and counsell. And for this cause will I willingly present my selfe before your King, making him to vnderstand, that corrupting the inuiolable lawes of Iustice, he doth you wrong and great iniustice, to take your Cittie away from you by force and authoritie. And if there be anie Knight in his Court will maintaine the contrarie, I hope by the helpe of God to make him confesse it by force of Armes.

Thus much hee said for that he knew before howe Belcar one of King Frisols Sonnes was lately married with Alderine the Duke of Pontus Daughter, and brought away his wife into Hungarie, whereupon that occasion they held great feastes and Tournies: so that growing vppon this quarrell in this contention with him or with the Prince Dutreus, and killing him in single combat he hoped to do acceptable seruice to his Ladie Gridonia, being this house neere allied to that of Constantinople.

The Ladie thanking him for this honest and curteous offer,

ter, tolde him that if it pleased him to bare her companie, shee feared nothing, and that leauing her sonne vnder good sure garde, shee purposed to depart verie soone with some number of knights for her safer conduct. Whereunto the knight answered that he was readie at any time when so euer she pleased. And therefore shee caused good order to bee taken for all thinges which might be needfull in this voyage, desiring before her departure, to get into her possession for the knightes sake the Damsels of Zerphira, which remayned still in the Marchants hands, paying for euery one of them a reasonable ransome according to their estate.

All that night was Prince Edward very sad, for hee could not resolue with himselfe, whether he should first goe to Gridonia to present vnto her the Infant Zerphira, or whether he should passe vnto Constantinople, to end the Combat with Primaleon.

In fine after many resolutions he concluded that with himself, which he put in execution very early on the morrow morning; for hee came to request the Marchant his Hoast that it would please him to commaund a sonne of his called Diazan to goe on an errand for him as farre as the Clouen-Rocke, wherein he was more willingly obayed, than hee could commaund; then went he straight to the Infants chamber, whome he told that he would send her to an excellent Lady who would honour her, and vse her with all humanity, and hee besought her to bee willing to goe, hoping to come to visit her there ere long, and to bring her such newes, which should giue her no occasion to repent her going thither.

The young Princesse albeit this offer went nere her heart, answered him nenertheless in this maniter: In good faith it is great reason sir, that as your prisoner and captiue I should obay your requestes without any contradiction, especially knowing they derive from the sincere and honest amity which it pleaseth you to beare me, albeit I am sure I shall neuer be able to merite it on my behalfe; nenertheless I beseech you to cause my Damsels to be called hether, vnto whome if it please

you

you I will speake some few words before my departure; most willingly will I cause it to bee done replyed the Knight: So hee caused them to come into her Chamber forthwith, where these young Damsels seeing their Mistres in strange manner to hate her owne life in deploring and bewayling her infortunate disaster, they began altogether to make such a strange and pittifull complaint, that the Knight was constrayned to seperate them, and some after to send away Diazan with the Infant Zerphira towards the Castell of the Cloven-Rocke, to present her to the Princesse Gridonia from a Knight unknowne, with a letter whose tenour followed in these words.

Prince *Edwards* Letter to the Princesse *Gridonia*.

TO the rarest Paragon of Princesses the Lady Gridonia, the onely Phœnix of her time, future Queene of Polonia, and lawfull heyre of the Duchy of Ormeda, a Knight who desireth to serue her perpetually, sendeth greeting, kissing with all curtesie, the hand of her Excellency. The perfect Idea of your never perishing beauty, accompanied with so many other singuler gifts of grace, which the celestiall providence doth distribute equally to diuers persons, hath so dimmed the cleere-shining eyes of her burning and unquencheable beames, that the Artizan in pourtraying of his liuelieſt peece helpeth himselfe with your diuine lineatures, as it were beauty it selfe descended into these lower Regions to bee seene amongst vs: Such an example seene with mine eyes, besides the testemony of another strange accident, haue (as it were a fatall arrow) so liuely pierced my breast, that I can take no rest, but in trauelling to aspire vnto that, which should giue mee the sweete fruition of so precious a rareness of fortune; which is onely to reuenge the death of Perrequin of Duas your Cosen, vppon the false traytor and fellonious banished Primaleon

Primaleon of Greece. Continuing which tranquillity of ſpirit by trauaile of my body, I ſayled merrily towards Conſtantinople, and for the ſame effect; when by great fortune I met a Bzigandine of Moyes toſſed by tempeſt of weather into the Northſea, which would haue taken me priſoner: But the ſoueraigne of all Gods, conſtraynyng theſe mine enemies to paſſe the edge of my ſwoorde, hath ſafegarded and reſerued me to the end to be your comforter, and the reuenger of your iuſt quarrell. For aſſurance whereof in attending that happy ſeaſon, I ſend you in Paſſage a Damſell ſiſter of great parentage, whom I found within the belfrie of theſe miſcreant Moyes; whom ſo I pray you to vſe and entertaine as you ſhall knowe her kindes and fauorably demeane, both bicauſe ſhe is well in regard of the anguiſh which ſhe ſhall ſuffer perceiuing her ſelfe thus captiue, as alſo in reſpect of the ſincere and perfect amity which ſhe will ſhew vnto you all her life time.

He who hath not his match in good will to doo
your Ladiſhip all dutifull ſeruice.

So them departed Diazan with Zerphira, and all her veſſels, accompanied with many Merchants who conuoyed them very willingly; and holding on their iourney, they arriued at the Caſtle of the Clouen-Rocke, where after they had giuen Gridonia to vnderſtand that there was a Damſell which they had brought her in the behalfe of a Knight. Incontinent the Drawe-bridges were all let downe, and the great gates ſet wide open.

Then Diazan tooke the Infant by the hand, to lead her ſtraight into the Chamber of the Princeſſe, who ſeeing her ſo richly attyred and ſo courteous to doo her honour and reuerence, ſuppoſed ſhe muſt needs be extracted from ſome high and illuſtrious Kinges: wherefore ſhee came to welcome and to entertayne her honourably: and perceiuing that the Lyon (which neuer ſtyrd from her) began to fawne vpon her, ſhe ſaid alaud; Sirrha I cannot beleeue, but that this Lyon knoweth you, conſi-

dering the gentle semblant and ioyfull entertainement he sheweth you, which as yet I haue neuer seene him do to any, since he was with me.

Zerphira vnderstood nothing thee spake, but stedfastly beholding her excellent & perfect beauty, reputing her selfe most happy to become into the power and custody of so gentle and rare a Princelle. Neuertheleſſe, Diazan who vnderstood her well, speaking for her, set one knee on the grounde and made this answere.

Madame, in very deede I beleeue your Lyon neuer saw this Damsell before, because shee commeth but nowe from a strange Lande, farre distant from these Countries, but he preiudgeth the great debte which the Knight who sent her vnto you, hath to do your seruice, and also can iudge of the high choyce of this Princelle, beeing daughter to the Soldan of Persia, for so much, as the Lyons by nature (as being Kings among the foure footed Beasts) do recognize and knowe perfectly the illustrious and royall bloud.

So hee proceeded to declare the Embassage which Prince Edward gaue him in charge to deliuer by worde of mouth, beside the letter which he had already giuen into her hand, praysing him in valour and curteſie aboue all the Knights to whom the powers Elements had euer lent any influence of harmonicall constitution: And told her moreouer, how he caused himself to be called the Knight of the Dogge, by reason of a very great and fayre Dogge that he carried along with him, which was of so good knowledge, that hee ayded and succoured him greatly in his necessities.

Squire my friend, replyed the Princelle Gridonia, I make no doubt but that the Knight of the Dogge is both magnanimious and of great Prowesse, seeing that without knowing me, hee hath had this remembrance of me; wherein I pray the Lord God to giue me the fauour, that according to his merite, I may returne him his due guerdon and reward, and giue him so much power and strength, as by his happy victory he may chace from my hart the languishing and bitter sorrow in

which

which hath reazed it a long time. And for a teſtimony of the loue and duety I do owe him reciprocally, I take and accept this Infant (his preſent) in the place and ſtede of a ſiſter and a good friend; and ſo will I loue and honour her, as if wee were both iſſued out of one wombe.

For this acceptation and curteſie did Diazan thanke her moſt humbly, in kiſſing her hand; then did hee interprete to the Infant what ſhe ſaid, whereat Zerphira bowing her ſelfe very low, did giue her alſo thankes for her part: and then did Gridonia take her by the hand to make her ſit downe by her, praying her to be of good cheare, and to deuiſe what paſtime ſhee pleaſed; all which Diazan expounded vnto her as well as he could.

When ſhee who perceiued ſo much honour was done vnto her in eating and drinking alwaies with Gridonia, which made her greatly comfort her ſelfe, and driue away all pẽſiuenes of the place, but not that ſhe could in any wiſe altogether forget her aduerſe and vnfortune: Neuertheleſſe, ſhe neuer ſhewed any euident token thereof, but very wiſely diſſembled it, whereat Gridonia marueiled not a little, but much more at her great riches and iewels which ſhee carryed about with her.

Diazan after hee had rewarded the Marchants of Arriace with ſome preſent, ſent them away home to their homes, becauſe hee meant to abide there to ſerue the Infant Zerphira, whom he aduertized by the way, to take héede leaſt ſhee ſhuld ſpeake any thing in fauour of the Emperour of Conſtantinople to Gridonia, nor to ſhew by any token or ſigne that ſhe loued him, or any of his flocke or kindred: Which ſhee who was both ſage and well aduiſed, toke for ſo good a forewarning, that ſhee was neuer heard in her preſence to ſpeake any thing by affection of this family.

CHAP. XXII.

How the Knight of the *Dog* presented himselfe with the Lady of *Arriace* before King *Frisol*, who at his entreaties let the widdow alone with her Cittie, and how afterward he got the best in a Tourney which was held in his Court, and what fell out by occasion thereof.

Iazan being departed with the infant Zerphira, Prince Edward, & the Lady of Arriace, accompanied with twentie knights whom they tooke for their safe conduct, take their iourney towards king Frisols Court, so that arriuing there the third day afterward about euening prayer, the knight being in his complete armour except his head-peece and gantlets onely, led the Lady by the hand, euen vp to the chamber of presence: for in this place did the king recreate himselfe with his children, and with many other Lords, who were come thether of purpose to see and welcome Belcar not long time before arriued from Durace: and there was besides the Queene his Mother, accompanied with Esquiuela & Alderine, the wiues of Ditreus and Belcar his two Sonnes, with many other Ladies, deuising and sporting themselues together, euery one according to their pleasure. The king seeing the Lady come in, knew presently she was Lady of Arriace, and beholding the physiognomie and honest countenance of the knight, iudged with himselfe he descended from some high and great linnage: when the Lady prostrating her selfe at his feete, thus began to frame her complaint.

Sir, it hath pleased you to cause notice to be giuen me to appeare before your royall Maiestie, to the end that vnder the couloure of fortification and assurance of your kingdome, you may dispossesse me of my towne of Arriace, because it is situate vpon the frontiere confining vpon the Moores your enemies, from whom ye suppose putting therein sure guarde and good garrison, to shut vp all passage that way, & to cut off the hostile

inuasion

inuasion, which they might otherwise make into your Ma-
iesties dominions; wherein I marueil much that you showe-
your selfe to me, being but a poore widow, rather than to any
other of your vassalls, to vse such rigour & extremitie towards
them: considering if you alledge that my sonne is too yong to
keepe quarter, and to hold so dangerous a passage. I will an-
swer you, this reason seemeth not sufficient to execute iniustice
towards him, but rather ought you as his King & soueraigne
Lord, to take him into your protection and safegarde. Nor can
you finde iustly any fault, that my citty is not well guarded
and fortified, seeing I ordinarily keepe in pay a great number
of Knights and Souldiers, who do not neglect their duty and
diligence, as well in placing Sentinels and Scouts both by
day and night, within and without my walles, as likewise in
maintaining all other things which are requisite for a frontire
towne: besides every one may presume, that in losing of it I
should most of all be endamaged, as being deprined of the
principall cittie of my dominion, which I will not exchange for
any other which you shall offer me in recompence to haue it.
This is the matter I am come to let you vnderstand, hoping
to finde some pitty and compassion in a Prince so full of cle-
mencie as you are, otherwise I would neuer haue presumed
to haue been so bolde to appeare before your presence, assuring
my selfe if you cause the charters of your Royaltie to be exact-
lie looked ouer, you shall finde it appertaineth not to you by
any vassellage, but hath alwaies beene the chiefe cittie belong-
ing to the whole stocke of mine ancestors.

The king hauing giuen good eare to the speeche of the Lady,
perceiued the Knight whome she brought thether came to de-
fend her in a good and iust combate, if she should stand in neede:
and forasmuch as he knew the blame and vallaint Knights by
their countenance, this seemed vnto him a very resolute and
sufficient man to maintaine her quarrell, which was not
grounded of her part vpon any light occasion: by reason wher-
of he somewhat repented himselfe, in that he had caused her to
be summoned vpō that busines, albeit to see what the Knight

would say, he made her this answer. Lady, it néedeth not to many words to you, determine you to render into my hands speedily your towne, or else I will send to surprize it by force, and will giue you no other recompence, but that peraduenture which your sonne hath inherited from his father, which is to be a disloyall traitor to his King.

O immortall God, then exclaimed the Lady, what is that which these mine eares haue now heard? Surely sir you may do and say of vs your pleasure, because you are our Prince and liege Soueraigne: but if I were as good a knight as I am a woman, I would make good against the hardiest knight of your Court, that my deceased husband neuer committed any treason in his life. Moreouer, if my sonne be wrongfully depriued of the title, which by hereditary succession appertaineth vnto him, we shall haue force, and not iustice offered vnto vs. I will do iustice, and that which I ought to do, replyed he: and I will see who will contradict me therein. Then Prince Edward who had hetherto remained silent without any worde speaking, aduanced himselfe towards the King, saying: I cannot sufficiently maruell of you, O King of Hungarie, hauing heard heretofore the renown of your valiant and marueilous feates of armes, blowne abroade into the world with perpetuall fame and praise, that ye will now vpon so small an occasion obscure and dim it.

For vnderstanding well the discourse of this affaire, it séemeth to me that rather vpon some malice and grudge which you may haue conceiued against this Lady, than otherwise vpon any iust and apparant reason you will put her from her owne good. In so much that I must of fauour intreat you, that you will not suffer your selfe to be carried away with enuy, nor be blinded by couetousnesse, séeing she will sweare vnto you, to be for euer hereafter your loyall vassaile, as heretofore she hath euer béene, and to kéepe so strong a guarde within Arriace, that you shall not néede to trouble your selfe, but remaine content in assurance of all tranquillitie and peace, so that if you refuse this reasonable condition which she offereth

you,

you, I shall be constrained to say you do her wrong, with intention to make it good by single combate against whomsoever would maintaine the contrary. Belcar who was of great courage, standing then up with many other Lords who were present, answered him as it were in chollar. Knight, you come very presumptuous and arrogant into this place, not respecting in what manner ye speake before a King, whome I suppose you selfe hath no children nere him. who dare qualifie your pride: you shall not be denied the combate if you so faine desire it; and the Lady shall sustaine more damnage in this her comming with you in her company (for your sake) than she shall get profit.

I know not who you are (replyed the Prince) who give so discurteous language unto Gentlemen being strangers; unto whom ye ought to hearken attentively in their demaunds. Indeede I heard before I came into this Country, that the King was both valiant and active in feats of Armes, whome his sonnes did second and imitate very nere. For was I ignorant he had many other brave knights in his Court, which notwithstanding could not debarre me from undertaking willingly the protection and defence of this Lady; so that if ye will upon her quarrell enter the combat with me, I am ready to goe into the field, upon condition, if you be by me banquished, the King shall never lay further claime to the Lady, nor to none of hers for the Citty of Arriace.

Belcar accepted with a very good will the battell upon the same condition, and gave him to understande who her was. Whereat the Knight of the Dogge was most glad: For all this, the King would not hazard his sonne to perrill of death, but commaunding him to sit downe againe in his place, telde them he would in no wise accord unto this battell; because he was already resolved to do that which the Ladyes Knight had entreated him to, remembring himselfe what occurrences he had passed in seeking strange adventures: So that Belcar having seated himselfe againe, in a great chafe, the King turned himselfe towardes Prince Edward with this language.

Gentleman,

Gentleman, for your sake haue I released the towne of Arriace vnto this Lady, conditionally she shall sweare to keepe it safe with sufficient garrisons of Soldiours able to defend it; that neither shee nor her sonne shall hereafter bee rebels to my Crowne, and that you shall doo one pleasure for mee beside.

Most willing will I employ my selfe in whatsoeuer it shall please you to commaund me (replyed the Prince) so it bee not to reueale my name, otherwise reputing the grace and fauour that you haue shewed to this Lady, as if I had receiued it my selfe. Then directing his speech to the Lady hee willed her to kisse the Kings hand; the Assistants who tooke how secrete hee kept himselfe, not bowing to doo the like, they presumed hee was some Knight descended of high Parentage. In the meane time, Belcar and the Englishman were in some contention, but the Queene who tooke pitty of the Lady of Arriaces teares, besought the King not to procure the death of her sonne by this meane; so that for many respects he gaue the Lady her content, who sware solemnely vnto him to obserue all that hee propounded to her faithfully: and to sende him also her sonne vnto his house, to be brought vp to serue his Maiestie. King Frisol requested the Knight to sojourne in his Court vntill the next sunday, to shewe him some Chiualries in a Tourney which should be held there; whereunto he answered he would willingly abide with him, albeit he had great affayres to doo in another place. And hereupon the King commaunding they should goe to disarme him in some good chamber of the Castel, the Knight thanked him greatly for that curtesie, excusing himselfe that he would not leaue the Lady of Arriace. Whereupon the King commaunded his Harbingers to see them well lodged without his Pallace.

Euery body stood gazing vpon Maiortes the Dogge which Clawdius lead in a Lease, marueiling much at his height and goodly proportion, amongst whom were many which did much desire to haue him; and aboue all, there was the Earle of Oregua, a great hunter and chacer in Forrests rauished to enioy him. Wherefore reputing himselfe a hardy Knight, he determined

determined to lay an ambush for Prince Edward to take him away by violence as you shall understand. But the Lady being a very joyfull woman to see her daughter so happy in fine, would not depart until the Tourney were finished, which her knight also purposed to attend; who in the meane time was for to offended with himself that he combatted not Belcar, because that slaying him in battell, hee thought to do great pleasure to Gridonia, who hated mortally the partakers and louers of the Emperour of her capitall enemy.

But the King and all the Lords there present, had no other talke but of him; so that Belcar who felt himselfe somewhat displeased hearing all the praise powred upon him, saide thus much in all their hearings, The houre approcheth when we shall see what hee can do; Notwithstanding I marvell much of you my Lorde (loking upon his father) that you suffer your selfe so farre to be overcome with words. I have done it (sayde the King) to prevent the perill of your life, having no better right on my side, and let mee heare no more, for good Knights ought to be honoured and maintained by Princes.

After this commaundement this plea came no more in question, but every one promised to make himselfe braue against the Tourney, attending with an incredible desire to be halue the Knight of the Dogge would be made perfect. Sunday being once come, the King went accompanied with his Barons, and the Queene attended by her Ladies to the Scaffold, and presently the place of the Iouste was opened, where were about two thousand knights, what on one side and other, and the Duke of Bolla and the Earle of Oregna bebe vpon the Courtiers side, being both very valiant Champions. At the first encounter many knights were seene goe to the ground, then beginning to strike one vpon another rogeling, battling, and pointwise, making such noyse as if a Legion of Diuels had beene beating vpon their Armes. But King Frisol looked about on every side, thinking to recognize the English Prince, who hearing say that the Diuersity was already begun

gun(supposing some one or other of the Kings Seruaes would be within the lists) he came thether accompanied with the vv. Knights of the Ladies: so that seeing the courtiers at the point of carying away the victory, he purposed to reuenge the seruice side: and dashing Spurres to his Horse, before he brake his Launce, he laide many a Knight along; then setting hand to his sword he did marueilous things: By this meanes knew him many Courtiers, who came to proue themselues against him. Amongst others, the Earle of Oregua comming very neere him lent him two sound blowes with his Mace: for which he sought meete reuenge by one blow which Prince Edward crossed him ouer his Helmet, wherewith being sore hurt he fell to the ground. Surely, quoth the King then, who beheld the conflict, I perceiue now that which my heart did presage vnto me, of the prowesse of the Knight of the Dog, to be true: things which euery one may iudge aswel as I, by his honorable feats of armes which do aduance him far aboue all those of the whole troope. And as he uttered these speeches, behold Belcar and his brother Ditreus who enter the lists vnknowne, and for they said they would not be seene in the Tourney that day, to the end to auoid as much as might be, the clamor of the vulgar sorte allone as the Nobility were placed vpon the Scaffolds, they went secretly to arme themselues, to thrust in among the crowde, as being no better than simple Knights onely: where being arriued, Belcar ran his Launce couched with great fury against the Knight of the Dog, who seeing him come with such a pouder, attended him couered with his shield: wherevpon he receiued one lively attaint, wherewith had it not bin for the hand of the Armeror, who fatally tempered it, Prince Edward had bin in danger of his life. Then began they to charge one another with inuincible courage, neuertheless their conflict continued not long: because the Englishman who excelled Belcar in chiualry, feeling himselfe sometwhat moued, lighted so fell a knock vpon his Helmet, that he cleft it a two, and wounded him very in his head; so that he was constrained to fall astonied to the ground. When the Prince of Hungarie saw his brother Bel-

car

çar he so piteously vanquished, & the Courtiers ouerthrowne, he ran as a mad man against Prince Edward with so terrible a furie, that his blow glansing within the plates of his poul-drons vnder his shield, he gaue him a little wound in his arme: but he went not farre from the place to vaunt himselfe therof, for the Knight of the Dog reached him two so sound blowes vpon his left shoulder betweene his Habergion and his head-peece, that he sent him to keep his brother company. Afterward with the aid of the most valiantest on his side, he brought his aduersaries in such sort, that he made them all discampe to saue themselues: and seeing himselfe victorious, being very weary and ouer trauelled, he retired himselfe into his lodging, where he was by the Lady and her Knights disarmed, and his wound carefully loked vnto. Meane while the King, who knew nothing of his sonnes disaster, shewed himselfe to be very ioyfull to see that which he presumed of the Knight of the Dog to be in effect most true: and supposed thereby he had done very well not to graunt his sonne Belcar the combate against him: nevertheles being arriued at the Pallace, and finding them both in so ill pickle, he changed his voice into sorrow, saying: Alas! I deserue this well, who did my self inuocate the Knight to attend the Tourney, to procure me this mischiefe: now let him go his wayes on Gods name, and that no man be so hardie as to disturbe and vex him.

The English Prince, vnderstanding how Winces and his brother were wonderfull ill at ease, hoping for wonders which they receiued of his hand, was the gladdest man in the world, for the respect which you haue heard before: and considering how it was not very good to soiourne any longer in this court, requested the Lady to take her leaue of the King, and that it would please him to pardon him if he should no longer there-with (which she did most willingly, not without great enquiry of the King to know who her Knight might be, wherein the good Ladie being not able to satisfie him any other wise, but that a Merchant of Arriace had taken him into his ship in England as a passenger: he tooke per congie honestly of him to returne

home to her own house, whether the knight of the Dog would nedes accompany her a good part onward of her way: whereof the Earle of Oregua being aduertized, who hated him mortallie, for that he had beene dismounted by him in the Tourney: desiring also with an extreame affection, to get his faire Dog Maiorte: frō him, encouraged a brother of his, who was both a valiant and a hardy champion, to seeke to be reuenged of him, alledging he durst not leaue the Court without incurring great suspition. He framed so cunning a speech, that he sent his brother after Prince Edward with 11. knights very well appointed & armed, praying him not to assaile him, vntill he had intelligence by his spies, that he had taken his last leaue of the Lady. And then taking some good opportunitie they might ouertake him to massacre him, getting into their possession as soone as they could the Dog. They followed him vntill the second dayes iourney, when he tooke his farewell of the Lady with this faire semblant. Madame, will it please you to excuse me, if I beare you company no farther: for hauing matter of importance to be done in an other part, I see the terme at hand when I must nedes take my iourney thether where my businesse lieth. Moreouer, I hope now you shall not be well enough without my aide, being almost at your home, where ye shall liue hereafter in all peace and at your hearts ease.

The Lady who saw him speake in good soth, finding herself greatly beholding to him, durst not by any entreaty withdraw him from his passage: which notwithstanding she would willingly haue done, at the least to haue gotten his company but vnto her Castel, to haue feasted him there, and to haue bestowed on him some presents beseeming his estate: wherefore taking her leaue with teares in her eyes, she offered him some rich Iewels, which he would in no wise accept, onely he recommended the Merchant vnto her who brought him out of England, vpon whom afterwards for his sake she bestowed many great fauours: so will we suffer her in great ioy & contentment to goe home to her Citty, to tell what befell Prince Edward after he was departed from her company.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXIII.

How Prince *Edward* vanquished the twentie Knights whom the Earle of *Oreguaes* brother had laid in ambush to kill him, and to take away his Dogge: and how afterward he was brought by strange aduenture into a Caue, where he dreamed a terrible dreame, and the sequel thereof.

THe Knight of the Dog bidding the Lady of Arriace adieu, take his way towards Constantinople, when the Earle of Oreguaes brother who followed him by the fot, had aduertisment thereof by one of his spies, that was alwayes at his elbowes: by whose meanes learning perfectly what way he was to holde, rideth a great gallop to ouertake him by a little path, which lead into a wood, hard by which he was to passe: where ambushing his xx. knights, he went before, to the end that discrying him a farre of, he might marte him full in the teeth, to make him endure the charge of his ambuscado. In breefe, beholds he commeth his fost and easie pace, as he who had a great iourney to make, when the Earles brother, who marched already against him, measuring by his eye how farre he had to go to the place of the Ambush, eased a little the pace of his horse, to meete him iust in the same place: where being arriued, he thus began. Knight, is it not you, who now goe from the King of Hungaries Court, with so good penyworths of the disorders and outrages which ye haue there committed? By God I will saue you a labour from going far this waye to make your vaunts thereof. O it is I whom it concerneth replied Prince Edward to saue you from this reproche of treason, which might be laide hereafter in your teeth to your shame and dishonour, which I hope to bot at this present by the aide of him, vnto whom all iniustice is odious and detestable. Whith that he came and charged his Launce with such a power against the Earles brother, that piercing him cleane through the body, he had no need to call for a Barber to

Surgeon to dreſſe his wounds, which the twenty Knights in ambuſhed (who had already compaſſed him in rounde that he might not flie from them any wayes) perceiuing, ran two or three vpon him at once, the one whereof failed his ſtroake, and winding himſelfe aſide at the attaint of the other, he hit the third which came carreering after th̄ with ſuch a ſound blow vpon the pate, that he ſent him from his ſaddle betweene his horſe heles, wherein falling downe he burſt his neck.

Then the Engliſh Prince, ſeeing himſelfe in extreame danger of life, made choyce rather to looſe it valiantly, than to ſaue it by cowardly flight, ſo that in a moment his courage came to him in ſuch ſort, that hee made his aduerſaries well know, they had ſought him out but for their owne miſchance: For as a furious Lyon he made ſuch a bloody maſſacre of them, as the very graſſe being greene before, & now all ſtayned with their goare bloud did giue ſufficient teſtemony thereof. But whilſt he ſtoode to incloſe with a great troupe of them, the reſt flew vpon his man Clawdius ſaying to him; let goe the Dog Raſcall, or elſe thou ſhalt dye preſently without repenting thy ſinnes. I will let him ſlip indeede (quoth the Page) but it ſhall be ſmall for your aduantage; before he had well ſpoken theſe words, letting ſlip one end of the Leaſe, hee let Maiortes loſe amongſt them: the Dog eſpying his Maiſter in that perrill, ran ſo furiouſly to bite the horſes that made front againſt him, pulling out with his teeth their buttocks & flanks, that they were forced to alight from their backs: Then began he to play the diuel amongſt them, nor was there any plate of their Harneſſe ſo faſt nayled, but he rent it in pieces with his teeth; then faſtning in his ſharpe fawes in the places which he ſaw vnarmed, he brought the fleſh all away with him, vntill the greateſt part of the twenty Knights were dead or wounded in the place; the reſt betoke them to their heles as faſt as they could run, becauſe Maiortes had made ſuch worke of their horſes, that they could not ſtand them in any ſtead; ſuch was the rage and fury of this Dog, that whoſoeuer had beheld him teazing the fleſh of their horſes, and pulling their armour in peeces,

might

might eaſily haue remembred the Scian or Bactrian Dogs, whom they feede with the fleſh and bloud of men, to the end to make them more fierce and eager againſt their enemie.

Prince Edward for his part receiued but two or three little wounds, which recure the ſame, went into a little Citty not far from there into a rich Bourgers houſe, who leaſted him very honourably during the time of his maliady, which laſted but eight dayes, becauſe none of his wounds were daungerous at all; but being healed and cloſed vp, he purpoſed to betake himſelfe again to his former iourney with his man Claudius and Maiortes his good Dog, whom hee loued and made more account of than before. Already was the greateſt part of the day ouerſpent, before Prince Edward had made an ende of the conflict which ye haue heard recited, whereof the Earle of Oregua being aduertized by one of thoſe who ſaued himſelf by vertue of his heeles, hee was ready to dye through rage and deſpite; and cauſing the bodies of his Brother and the other ſlayne Knights to bee enterred, could not tell how to conceale this ignominious ouerſight (as in like caſe the true Iudge of all doth permit ſuch hainous diſloyalties to bee quickly made knowne) but the bruit came to the Kings eare: who forthwith impriſoned him as a tranſgreſſor of his commandement, thereby to manifeſt vnto the world his own innocency in this treaſon, conſidering the coniectures which might be gathered by the hard meaſure which his two wounded ſonnes receiued at the hands of this ſtranger: Which deede if it cauſed him to be highly honoured throughout all his kingdome; no leſſe did euery one commend the proweſſe and valour of the Knight of the Dog, who being recouered of his wounds, as ye haue lately read, hath taken his leaue of his Hoſt to proſecute his intended voyage. And trauelling fiue dayes ſpace along the ſea Coaſt, on the firſt he entred into a forreſt, and found not in all that whole day any Cabbin or Tent wherein to make his repaſt, but one onely olde houſe where ſome ſhepheards had ſet vp a lodge couered with thatch; ſo that he was conſtrayned to lodge therein all that night with Claudius his Page, who led

along

along with him his great Dog: neuertheleſſe before any ſleep could cloſe vp his eyes, he ſaw from a corner wherein he was couched vpon a little ſtraw, comming into that homely Cell, two goodly yong Stags, caſting forth of their eyes an admirable glittering, whom allwone as Maiorres eſpyed, he ſtarted vp forthwith, as if he would haue ruſht vpon them furiouſly. But it fell out to the contrary, for they went out againe all three one after another, as quietly as if they had been brought vp in one houſe together all their life time: ſo that the Prince no leſſe aſtoniſhed with this new accident: than deſirous to ſee the end which would follow thereof, went forth of the Hermitage for the ſame purpoſe; and beholding the three beaſts run very louingly and quietly into the wood together, he ſaid. Now ſo God helpe me, it would greatly vex me if I ſhould loſe in this ſort the Dog, which I haue hitherto ſo well defended hitherto Claudius bring me my horſe, that I may go after to ſaue him if I can. He had not ſcarſe ſpoken the word, but the Page was come with his horſe, vpon which mounting he was ſone in the ſame way which he ſaw they had taken: and albeit he galloped amaine, yet could he neuer ouertake them, and neuertheleſſe he neuer loſt them out of his ſight. So that following them all night long, being very glad to ſee them trip ſo louingly together before him, yet was he far more ioyfull when he perceiued them hide themſelues within the narrow mouth of a Caue; where he being arriued, leauing his horſe with his Page who followed him, entred in preſently after them with his good ſword in his hand. So far went he within that darke hole vnder ground, that he at the laſt drew neere to a goodly ritch Pallace, ioyning hard vnto a moſt pleaſant garden planted round with all ſorts of fruite trees: betwixt which he ſaw many channels running with cleare ſtreames, comming all forth of a moſt ſumptuous and magnificent fountaine, whoſe baſon of fine Jaſper ſtone, was ſupported by three Harpies of Oriental Chriſtolite. There Prince Edward encouraged him ſelfe to go on, and as he went a little farther, he found vnder a Pauilion of cloth of Golde, a moſt beautifull & gratious Lady

ſitting

ting between the two Stags, and his Dog lay ouer against her: whom the Knight seing before him, laide his hands vpon the heads of the two Fawnes, of whome immediatly was made a wonderfull Metamorphosis, for they became two yong men very richly attired, vnto whom the Prince drawing nere, being greatly amazed of that sodaine transmutation, they began to shew great reuerence vnto him, and the Lady by and by fell vpon her knees, saying: Faire Knight, by the thing you loue best in this world, we beseech you pardon vs; if vnto this trouble and disease of minde we haue caused you to come so farre: for it hath not bin without good occasion, considering the long time we attende you here with great deuotion: and ye may be vndoubtedly assured not to suffer any disease in this place, rather will we serue you here as him, who ought to reestablish vnto vs, that which God and nature had prepared for vs after the death of our father. Behold her your Dog whom my Brethren brought into this place, not to the end to steale him from you, but to cause you onely to come into this place. Prince Edward hauing heard this Damsell speake, whom in the meanetime he take vp from the ground by the hand, appeased his choller, and answered her thus.

Madame, of a truth I was in very great care, fearing to lose this Dog, which I loue more than ye may imagine, notwithstanding, seeing I haue recouered him, I pardon you willingly wherein soeuer you say ye haue offended me: and if ye can deuise wherein I may employ my best indeuours to doe you good in that which they detaine from you wrongfully, I shall as willingly do it, as any Knight whom ye may finde within the circuit of the Horizon, or in the whole center of the world. Then the Damsell thankes him most humbly, and taking him by the hand, lead him to sit downe by her in a Chaire, where the two yongmen disarmed him: then brought they him out victuals to breake his fast, and (after he had well eaten and satisfied his hunger) they prayed him to lay downe his head vpon a rich pillow, which they laid for him vpon the side of a seat, there to repose himselfe, which he did willingly, being very weary with the trauell which he had endured the night before,

wherein he neuer slept winke. The Lady couering his legs with a Scarlet Mantle lyned with Miniuerings, he fell a sléepe presently, & in the meane time the two brethren went to fetch Claudius, who stayed with his Horse louing for him as yet at the mouth of the Caue. After that the English Prince had slept a good while, he awaked sodainely out of his sléepe, being sore affrighted with a terrible dreame which he had dreamed: It séemed to him to arriue at Constantinople to defie Primaleon, where entring within the Citty, he met a Lyon, and a fierce Lyonnesse, which as he would set his foote within the Gate, issued forth and ramped against him, tearing away with her pawes the forepart of his Haubergion, in such sort, that making still a wound bigger and bigger in his brest full against his heart, it séemed to him that his soule did presently depart out of his body. And as he thought beside that the Lion and he being furiously in fight together, he could in no wise preuaile to vanquish, nor in good sort defend himselfe from him, he was so much in nature resembling to the Lyonnesse: which caused him in a great fright to starte out of his sléepe, saying: Lord God helpe me, and permit not I beseech thée, that I receiue any shame or dishonour in the battell which I hope to haue against Primaleon: with that Olympia rose vp (for so was the Lady called sitting at his side) saying, Sir, you awake very sorrowfull, and I know not what may giue you occasion thereof, if it be not some dreame, which we know better than I, men account but false, and abusiue imaginations: for when they should be true, and should presage & foretell to credulous persons some token of future occurrences, yée are not ignorant but that the noble and generous mindes must passe through many strange and hard aduentures. In good faith yée say true Madame, replied the Knight, séeing that to finde you in this place with your Brethren lately transformed, I reputed a thing most strange and marueilous: wherefore I beseech you declare vnto me the whole discourse. Sir, replied Olympia, most willingly will I obey you in this request, since that it pleaseth you to vnderstand our great disaster.

Where-

Know ye, that we are all three children of the deceased Soldan of Nicea, the same who dyed by the most disloyall and tyrannous mischance that ever was heard of: for this good Prince our Father, being by nature mielie and gentle, loued most dearely a younger brother that he had, called Gelon, who of a troth neuer shewed him any part of reciprocall loue again, because from day to day he sought out all meanes to kill him, to seaze himselfe wholy with his estate & Seigniories, which fell out after a while as they were both together Hunting abroad. For my Father vpon a time making an assembly neer vnto a thick brake wherein his Hunters had enclosed a great wilde Boare, and spread the toyle about it, to shew him some passtime, the traitour seeing himselfe still neere my father, with three or foure of his faction, as he espied him a strait passage, beset & couered euery way round with thick bushes (by which way he doubted the Boare would issue) launched at him behind his back a very sharpe Iaueline, which he carried in his hand, with such violence, that it ran him cleane thorow the body, being constrained to fall at that very instant from his Horse backe to the ground, in the selfe same place: so that the Boare comming foaming and grinding his teeth in furious manner, toare and rent in peeces the Carcasse already dead, the fellon murtherer our Vncle, making the world beleeue howe the Boare had slaine him, and would haue done the like to him, had he not shifted himselfe a little aside: so that some Hunters who saw very well the contrary, durst neuer open their mouth so much they feared lest some mischiefe would be done them if they should make any speech thereof. This lamentable murther being committed, he went strait to Nicea, where inuesting himselfe with the whole Estate in lesse than fifteene dayes he proclaimed himselfe Soldan without any contradiction, my brethren and I being too little to resist so damnable a creature; and yet for all that the cruell & bloody minded monster would haue slaine vs then in that our pupillage, had it not beene for the ayde of a Knight called Osmaquin, very well learned in the Art of Magicke and Negromancie, who by the vertue of his

his secret Philosophy could foretell to our father, that he should take heed of Gelon his younger brother, vnto whom he gaue no credit, whereby this mischiefe happened vnto him. But the good old man as soone as our father was deceased, conducted vs thether into this place, where by meanes of his knowledge he hath built these goodly magnificences which you see, and dwelt here about fower yeares, vsing vs as his owne children; but at the end of that terme he fell into a grieuous and contagious mallady, with the which fearing to infect vs (knowing assuredly he should then dye) would not in any wise we should frequent neere him; but vpon a time, feeling himselfe at the very last extremity of his life, caused vs to come before him saying: My children sorrow ye not for my death, seeing that God being pittiful and merciful, will remember you before it be long: for a Christian Knight issued of Royall bloud, reuenging the death of your father, shall reestablish you in the goods which are wrongfully detained from you, and you shall know him by a fayre Dog which he hath, being a great deale better than he is supposed to be, in so much, as it is a man and a very valiant Knight. In fine, he commanded vs hauing once met you, to passe with you vnto Constantinople, where he foretold vs you should receiue a wound in Combat, whereof you might neuer be cured in all your life time, albeit it should be to your honor and immortall renowne: For the better direction of which voyage, and to auoyd all shipwracke in this Nauigation, he told vs we should finde a Frigot ready rigde with all things necessary not far from this place: then giuing vs many other holsome admonitions, for want of his breath which began to fayle him, hee yelded his soule vnto him who demanded it, in the same place as ye see, from whence my brethren haue issued forth diuers times to see if they might finde you: And now I trayse God it is not in vayne, because the Dog which Ormaquin told vs of, maketh me doubtles beleeue, all the rest will proue as true as this. You recount me great matters (quoth the Knight then) I beseech God with all my heart they may haue a happy ende, that I may reuenge you of so fowle a treason,

ſon. Mine aduiſe being to goe aſſone as may bee towards Conſtantinople, where the great affection I haue to ſe the aduenture which is reſerued for me, makes me thinke euery houre a yeare. When the young men bowing themſelues very low, & doing their obeyſance to the Knight, thus beſpake him. Noble Prince, ſince that by fatall deſtiny it falleth to your good hap to relieue vs out of this miſery, we hope alſo our valour will bee ſomething more aduantage to vs, in receiuing the order of Knighthood from your hand, the which I humbly kiſſe at this preſent, quoth the Elder called Moſderin, in token of the perpetuall ſeruice which ye ſhall alwayes finde at my hands: the like did the yonger named Bellager. Prince Edward embracing them both, was very glad to ſe Claudius his Page there alſo, to the end he might make more ſpéde away: ſo comming forth of the Caue, he mounted the Infant behinde himſelfe, and Moſderin vpon Claudius horſe, and his Page behinde him (for Bellager would go on foote) they began faire and ſoftly to ſet forward thorow a Forreſt. And becauſe they could not that euening reach the Sea-coaſt, they reſted within a wood in a very thick place all couered and beſet with trées full of leaues and greene boughes, where the Knight could not ſlep one winke, ſo much was his minde troubled with thinking of Maiortes, whom the Damiell had tolde him to be a man, and of the other things which Oſmaquin had prophecied of him, which did all iumper right with the imagination of his dreame: wherein his thoughts were ſtill occupyed vntill it was day. when they remounted on horſeback, & marching along the ſea coaſt, they came at laſt into a little créeke lying betweene two Rocks, where they found the Frigot at an Ancker, whereinto they went all aboard to ſhip themſelues.

In this veſſell were two little Chambers either of them garniſhed with a fine bed, and with whatſoeuer prouiſion was requiſite for ſuch a voyage: therein was alſo found two rich Armours parniſhed blacke, with two very fayre ſwordes for the young Gentlemen which Oſmaquin had layd in that place before he dyed, together with all the treaſure of the Sol-

dan their father, foreknowing well by meanes of his Art, what would ensue after their fathers decease. So soone as the young men spied these Armours, they besought Prince Edward to Arme them Knights before they set sayle, whereunto he most willingly condescended; and causing them to endosse the Armours, he buckled on the spurres vnto them both, and gyrded both their swords vnto their sides, giuing them the gentle accolada with these kinde speeches; I pray God to make you as good Knights as your aspect and phisiognomie both prognosticate, that the prowesse and valour which shall hereafter apparantly proceede from you, may deface the want of this act not accomplished according to the ceremonies requisite in the honour of Chiualrie.

When they had thus receiued the order of Knighthood, they hoysed sailes, and without euer setting eye of any other ship, they rowed so long, that within a while they found themselues in the maine Sea: where the Infant Olymba was so glad, seeing her two Brethren knighted, that she could not satisfie her self in her diligent attendance vpon Prince Edward. So that sayling with a prosperous and a calme sea, they came to forge within the coast of Thrace, whence Prince Edwarde discrying Constantinople a great way off, his heart began to rise, not knowing what fortune would befall him in that Citie.

And for that he would not directly put into an Hauen, they Anchored in a little guilfe about fiue miles off, where neuer any Ships vsed to ride: and yet thether haunted some poore Fishermen, whose dwelling was not farre of.

As they were all gotten a shore: My friends, quoth Prince Edward to the young Gentlemen, I must of necessitie go into Constantinople, where I hope to haue the combate granted me against Primaleon of Greece, sonne to the Emperour Palmerin, for indeed for no other cause am I come into these climates: wherein if God so much fauour me, that I may escape with my life, I promise you to be here againe quickly, to aide you with all my power: and if peraduenture I die, ending

ding my life in this Combate, heauens graunt ye may speedily recouer your estate and succession. Therefore mine aduise is, that ye abide here to accompany the Infant your sister, for I am determined to passe thether alone, as I came when ye first found me out.

When Olymba heard the Prince speake in this manner, she began to fetch a deepe sigh, saying: Ah Noble sir, God forbid your death should be so sodaine. I hope assuredly, you shall returne victorious in this battell; therefore trouble not your selfe with any of these thoughts and cares, but haue your confidence in God onely, who shall be your Protectour.

When Bellager interrupting this her speeche, requested the knight he would not for any thing in the world abandon him, whereby he might not see the ende of this combat: so that he must néedes goe along, and Mosderin, who would faine haue made the same voyage, was faine to keepe his sister company: where we will leaue them to bring the two knights vnto the Citty of Constantinople.

CHAP. XXIIII.

How Prince *Edward* being arriued in *Constantinople* to defie *Primaleon* vppon the death of *Perdiquin* of *Duas*, found himselfe surprized with the amorous and gratious regarde of the Infant *Flerida* the Emperours daughter: and how he and *Primaleon* fighting afterward a Combate at all extremities, were by her parted, and what fell out thereupon.

PRince Edward and Bellager hauing taken the way of Constantinople, had not trauelled aboue two miles, but they mette with many knights who were walking abroade in the fields: For this place being very pleasant and of great recreation, the Emperour would néedes shewe some

some pastime of hunting to Torques some to King Toman of Grieſca and of Romata, him whom he had before delyuered out of the hands and dangerous assaults of the Soldan of Persia.

This Torques a most gallant Gentleman and very active in feats of Armes, pricked on with the spurre of vertue to winne honor and renowme among the best knightes, beating euery day such high commendation of thoſe in the Emperours Court surpassing the best accomplished and most valiantest knights in all Europe and Asia, he besought the King his Father vppon a time to giue him licence to goe thether to see them.

Whereunto he most willingly gaue his consent, and the rather because the good Prince Palmerin was one of the greatest friends hee had, a thing which might easily bee iudged by the sumptuous and most honourable entertainement which hee made his sonne at his arriuall, vnto whom Primaleon opened the secrete gates of his amity, loue, and faythfull friendshippe, in such sort, that they were neuer shut vnto him afterward.

Now by this time Prince Edward being come iust to the place where was pitched the Emperours Tent (who was then walking abroade with his Empresse along by a little freſh streame which was very nere vnto that place, Primaleon and Torques with the Infant Flerida, and diuers other Ladies walking after them) he was greatly amazed and astonished for a time, but at the last he asked of a Squire who it was.

Syr (quoth he) it is the Emperour of Constantinople, who came hether yesterday to take his disport and pleasure at the Chace: Accompanied with the Prince of Grieſca, who arriued but this other day within his Court; And if you be a straunger in this place (as it seemeth vnto mee you are) I will presently shewe you the Emperour if you knowe him not, for behold where he is himselfe in person walking with the Empresse.

Right

Right ioyfull was the knight of the Dog to behold the Empe-
rour, calling to minde the maruellous deeds which he heard re-
ported of him, & approching neerer, he did not alight at all from
his horse, to shew that he came not to doo him ante seruice. But
a little he bowed himself on his horse mane, saying: Sir, of your
fauor I would request you, it may please you to shew me if Pri-
maleon your sonne be in this troupe or no, for that before you (a-
Reemes the most iust and equitable Prince liuing at this time
vnder the firmament) I will defie him vpon the death of a knight
whom he feloniously slew in his tourney. Iesus Christ, (quoth
the Emperour, then being some what offended) and when will
this demand haue an end? I tell ye knight, that both you and all
those who shall come to take this reuenge, seeme vnto me vnaui-
sedly aduised, since the truth of the act is so manifest and notorious.
But the Prince who saw him speake thus in choller, maruelled
at the manner of his answere, for that he reputed him a lit-
tle more modest and discreet than he seemed to be at that time,
so that being not able to containe within his heart the burning
zeale which prouoked him so farre, he was forced to replie vpon
his former purpose thus: Sir, I did not thinke to receiue so ri-
gorous an answere from so benigne and courteous a prince as ye
are, nenertheles to vse no superfluitie of speech, ye shall know
from me, that if Peregrim of Dugas haue not him yet auenged, the
small courage and cowardise of those who came hether for that
purpose hath bin the cause thereof, as I hope ere long to shew
you plainly, if ye will grant me the combat against your sonne. I
will so, quoth the Emperor, what you can doo more than other
who haue entered the field vpon this quarrell, whom I esteeme
of more, as at least of as great valour, and as expert knights as
your selfe. At that word prince Edward thought great scorne, &
would calle no longer with him, but being become furious,
and dreaming battle castles in the aire, when Primaleon & Tor-
ques, who lead betweene them faire Flerida by the hands, arriued
at the place where this protestation was made, and comming in
the same manner all three nearer vnto the knight, Primaleon who
knew what the matter was before, saluted him thus, saying:
I am Primaleon, would ye aught with me? thought he to

beaute, replyed the Englishmaid, for the death of Perregrine of Dacia, whom ye (like wreechardly, and not as an honourable and loyall knight) slue. It sufficeth (quoth the Constantinopolitan) hereupon ye shall haue the combat with me, which shall not be deferred ante longer, than till I come from arming my selfe. For God forbid that such staines and reproaches imputed to mine honour, should ever for me be deferred or permitted vnto further dispute and longer processe of time to decide them. Oh my God, can the infant Flerida, what vnreasonable bashfulnes are these? I neuer heard of anie demand more impudent and more incandiderately proponned than this, since that so often the truth thereof hath bene tryed, as euerie eye can tell, and I cannot imagine what other guerdon (base knights) pretend to haue, who come to reuenge this death vpon my brother, but onely to win my loue, without anie shew of other honest reason. Whiles speeches vttered she with so great a stomache, that the verie griefe which her heart apprehended, caused the fairie superficies of her angelicall face to shew so perfectly, that there is no man liuing but would haue remayned maruellously abashed to beholde her supernaturall and accomplished beautie: for hearing her exclamation, turned towards prince Edward her bleirie eyes, bedewed with teares, which distilled from her braine, through the vehemencie of the anguish which she felt in her brest, seeing her brother whom she loued as her owne soul, so chased, and so peruerse against her, to performe the battell. The gracious and pittifull regard of these two glittering starres wounded in a moment the heart of the knight in such strange manner, that loosing almost all sense, he cleane forgot Gridonia also, and the passion of this his greene and newe wound was so behement, that he found no phisition nor surgion who could vnderstand the method of his cure, except the verie same from whome his wounde was inflicted. Alas, what might hee then doo? Surely, willingly would he haue desisted with his honour from this battell, onely to haue done some acceptable seruice to the Princesse Flerida, whereby to haue gotten some accesse to be neere her. But what? Primaleon his aduersarie departed to goe arme himselfe, and the infant more than his mortall enemie, for without vsing all her forces failed her, and

her

her very sinfully, and (I think for fear) she retired her selfe incontinent with the Empresse into her tent. Alasse, the poore desolate lover remayned as it were rauished and in a trance, thinking on the dreame he had within the caue of Osmagain, and on the words which Olymba tolde him: lykewise he called to mind the two figures pictured vpon his shield, and of that which the Duke of Borbes sister, and the peasant in the wood had forewarned him of. All these thinges romping into his imagination, made him so perplexed and irresolute, as he could not tell what to doo, it seeming vnto him that for some one of these thinges whereof he was so many times forewarned, began to be true in deede. And on the other side, considering the high valour of Flerida, and from whence shee descended, had saine many reasons which did incite him to loue her above Gridonia, whom he had not as yet euer seene, nor promised any other thing but onely by his Letter to combat Primaleon, to doe her seruice, so that hee sayde within himselfe: O God of Gods, how great and admirable are all thy inuentions? who is able to ouerthrowe the things which are by thee established? Surely no liuing creature. Then if I may atchieue the fruition of mine vnhoped for desire, which hath now allayed my soule, I shall haue more occasion to complaine of Fortune. Wherein (to make my first action saie) either I will suffer my selfe to be vanquished in this combat, or else I will employ all the forces which God and nature haue lent me, to ouerthrow Primaleon: and it behoueth me to do my best, least I appeare to be of small valor in presence of so faire a Ladie, for if it be in my power to kill her brother, and I for loue saue his life, shall I not thereby purchase her grace & amity? Meane while the knight of the Dog had these imaginations in his head, Primaleon, who had taken post to go arme himselfe in Constantinople, returned mounted vpon a puisant courser, who the Emperour mitigating his sodaine indignation against the knight, began to like him better, and iudging by his very looke some excellent thing in him, commended him highly in his opinion & Bellagor likewise who accompanied him thether: then calling his sister Claudina and his faire Dog, Maiorter marueiled much more what hee was, so that Primaleon beeing arriued, the

peror

Emperour his father, threw his speare into him. Sonne, take ye heed ye behaue your selfe valiantly in this battell, for your enemie seemeth to be both magnanimious and generous. My gracious Lorde Father, replied Primaleon, it shall stand him then in good stead, seeing he continueth to sustaine a quarrell so vniust & repugnant to all reason. Then the Emperour who saw them both in a readynes to do their deuoires, commanded the Earle of Rhedon Captaine of his Pensioners, that assembling all his Archiers with their halberts, he should make a round in forme of a close field, wherin none should dare to stirre from his place, nor speake anie word: and so was there made a great circle furnished with the gardes standing arme in arme one by another, except on the side of the Emperours tent, to the end both he and the Empresse, and their daughter, might easily behold this combat. The Dukes Eustace and Ptholomey were appointed for iudges, who brought them both within the lists, & equally without anie fauour distributed to them the Sunne. Then placing themselues at the one side of the circle, and causing the word of the assait to be giuen by the Herald, the knights, who had great desire to come together, displaced themselues to fetch their raries as fast as they could gallopp one against another, with so great a brauerie and furious violence, that the verie earth seemed to sinke vnder them at their incounter, which was such, that breking their lances one against the other, they went both roundly ouer their horse croupes to the ground, either of them being wounded a little. But the desire to vanquish, & the shame they receiued in being both cast out of their saddles, (Primaleon before Torques, and prince Edward in presence of Flerida, whom he imagined had still her eie vpon him) made them make quicke speed to recouer themselues, and imbracing with an inuincible courage their shields, they began a most fierce fight with their swordes, being both right exquisite and singular good. Wherewith belaboring each other roughly, in a short space they couered ỳ ground round about them with the peeces of their shilds, & with the broken plates of their armes, so that disarming each other at euery blow they strake, they neuer lighted anie foile or touch, but presently the blood followed to the ground, the behol-

ders

ders affirming they never sawe the like cruell combat, howbeit they could not discerne as yet who should beare awaye the victorie. The two knights then having a long time buckled together in this manner without perceiuing anie vantage one of another, felt themselues verie feeble by reason of the great heate which they indured vnder their harneys, and also for the small intermission they tooke to continue this hot and fearefull fight of their first assault. Wherefore they returned from cheier to repose and breath themselues awhile, when the Empresse seing her sonne in so euill case, cryed out to the Emperor, saying: Alas my Lord, what a disaster & mischiefe is this? Will ye then permit that I beholde the mortall issue of so tragick a spectacle? Ah beastes forbid, for if Primaleon die, I shall presently beare him companie. If then either loue of a child or of a wife may find anie place in the heart of a father and a husband, I humbly intreate you haue pittie of vs both, considering the great danger wherin he is now, and the extreme anguish which I feele, which ye may soone remedie, praying them to proceede no farther in this theyr deadly fight. Willingly would I accord, quoth the Emperour, were it not for the shame and dishonor which thereby would fall vpon my head, for the world would then saie, I had done it especially fearing my sonne should be discomfited in the battell: albeit I perceiue no signe of aduantage that the one hath ouer the other, assuring you that by the death of two so valiant knights, the world should receiue great losse, for the good fruit which might come of their persons. Rather let your daughter Florida go to intreate them for her loue they would end, and desist this combat, and doubtlesse I suppose they will sooner surcease it for her than for anie other, and by this meane shall I auoid the danger of being taxed therefore by mine enemies and euilwillers. Meant had the Emperour spoken these words, but the Empresse who seemed greatly to feare the death of Primaleon, for this effect sent the infant her daughter, accompanied with many damosels, who comming with all speed vnto the knights who had already renued their assault more furiously than before, called vnto them aloud. Stay your hands my Lordes, I pray I be sued ye, & heare me a little what I would intreate ye to do for me. Then

Prince Edward seeing her before him who had wounded his hart cleane through, could not lift vp his armes to strike a blow, fearing himselfe bereft againe of all his forces, which caused him to retire backwards a little, when Primaleon chafing with great indignation against his sister, spake to her verie rigorously. Sister Florida, what meane yee, get yee gone from hence presently, and let vs pursue our assault, for I will die in the place, or I will make him die who hath put me to this pinche. Deare brother, replyed the infant, I beseech ye aboue all fauours that ye will euer do me, let slip the desire ye haue to finish this combat, wherein I thinke your enemie so curteous, that he for his part will be content to agree for my sake. Then turning towardes prince Edward, Faire Knight quoth she, albeit I finde my selfe of small merite in your behalfe, yet must I needs request ye by the faith ye owe to knighthood (which is to haue compassion of all Ladyes) and by the zeale and sincere affection ye beare to her whom ye loue most, to absolue your aduersaries as touching this difference, which I may no longer indure to behold so bloudily tried betweene ye, so invincible seemeth vnto me the high valour and extreame prowesse of ye both. And if for my sake ye do any thing herein, I shall haue cause to saie, I haue found more fauour and curtesie in a straunger, than in mine owne naturall brother: which shall not be without honest reward, when it shal please ye to imploie me in ante thing wherein I may manifest my good will to requite this vnderserued curtesie of your hands. The knight seeing with what grace his sweete enemie intreated him, reputed himselfe more than happie by this opportunitie to finde meane to do some thing which might please her, for that she required her this answere: O dame, ingrate soll and voide of all good iudgement shoulde I bee, if I shoulde refuse so high a Lady as your selfe the thing ye demand of me, for your sweete sake, who deserue much more of my hands, then may euer come from me, I absolue Primaleon of the controuersie for which we entered the combat, or else yeelding my selfe vanquished by him, I giue him the honour of the battell: Keepe it for your selfe, quoth Primaleon then, for since it is not mine by right, I will not enrich nor glorifie my selfe therwith. Then shall

shall triumph at my pleasure, when I shall [illegible] blandishe vnto me. Wherefore after Florida get ye hence, [illegible] otherwise yet will make mee shew my selfe discourteous to[illegible] wardes ye, for I will not haue this knight make his vaunts how hee brought me to this bay. Doo then your pleasure, replied the damsell, neuertheles I will neuer consent that yee strike one another anie more, because so lamentable will bee the end of this battell if ye be let alone. Yea what may, quoth Primaleon, wee will finish it now, seeing wee haue begun, and with that hee approached his enemie, vnto whome he let driue a puissant blowe, which hee warded with his shield, for all which he neuer put hand to his sworde to strike againe, or to reuenge himselfe; whiche the Emperour perceiuing, departed from his pauilion in great indignation against his sonne, whome he came to quite by the armes out of the field saying: What indignitie do yee now make your selues endure, refusing yee victorye a thing, which a knight of straunge Countrie (who neuer saw her before,) hath with all courtesie graunted her? This act of your opinion, is it peraduenture fainesse, or base imbecilitie? Go and disarme your selfe quickly, and know you haue highly displeased me. And yee knight, which hauing your selfe on Gods name (whether it shall chance well vnto yee, yonsse your good fortune hardly, to haue purchased this vnto you great reputation at my handes, (as well in feates of armes, as in courtesie) aboue all knightes whome I euer saw of frequented, that if it bee pleasure vnto you neuer come into my court to make demand of this foreto[illegible]ld combat.

Wonderfull glaues were all the assistantes of this vnlooked for act of the Emperour, e doubted prince Edward pinitelle knew full well vpon the [illegible] of his enemie, whom the kinde Ladies were [illegible] they might be [illegible] of the fielde into his tent to disarme him. But hee was in such a rage and extreame mayme vnto pinitelle, that to [illegible] whatsoeuer they could, in an houre they were not able to [illegible] pinitelle from his wrathfulnes. Then in the meane time the fayre Pinitelle Florida with [illegible] prince Edward, [illegible] to the ende to [illegible] him [illegible] for the great loue and

fauour

manner he had shewed her, presented him many honest offers, and amongst other talke him these two or three wordes. Brane knight, I haue found such curtesie in you, that whilest my soule shall make habitation in this passible bodie, wherein greatly confesseth himselfe bounden to ye, I shall remember the greate graces ye haue shewed me this daie, for the condigne thankes due vnto ye therefore, the heauens graunt mee so much grace, that some occasion may present it selfe vnto me, wherein I may haue meane to fulfille that in effect, which I cannot in wordes sufficiently protest vnto yee. Longer would the faire haue discoursed with prince Edward, (for loue discouered already both to the one and the other I knowe not what fatall liking) if the Empresse had not gone her selfe to see her sonne disarmed, by meanes whereof the giuing him a gracious farewel (such at the least did he interpret it) tooke her conge of her secret louer. Who seeing her depart so of a sodaine from him without anie leasure to answere her, was so perplexed as he knew not wel what to do nor to saie, vntill that his page Claudius and Bellager comming towards him brought his horse, as it were awaked out of a sound sleepe, he mounted incontinently on horseback, taking backe the same way to the place where he left Olymba and Meiderin, vnto he trauelled thether, Bellager, who was no lesse astonished of the bloudie battell which he sawe him fight, than of his great valor and prowesse, as they were on their waie bespake him in this manner. Sir knight, of a trouth you haue shewed at the request of the princes a great token of your honest and milde disposition towards Primaleon. Companion (quoth the prince) I know not what I should answere thee, but that he is one of the most valyant and skilfull knights whom I euer saw in my life: neuertheles much more vyd the delicate hand and the eloquent tongue of the infant his sister hyge me, than did his heauie & sound blowes, or all the skill of his fight, whereby her can so aduantagiously helpe himselfe. Bellager hearing the Englishman speake with so great affection, began to smile a little, when her preferred his paine, saying: Surely I beleeue the cruell wound which Osmagini prophesies you should receiue there, is in vaine of her thing but the extreame beautie of the princes, which I shoulde neuer

haue

fauour he had shewed her, presented him many honest offers, and amongst other tolde him these two or three wordes. Brane knight, I haue found such curtesie in you, that whilest my soule shall make habitation in this passible bodie, who therein greatly confesseth himselfe bounden to ye, I shall remember the greate graces ye haue shewed me this daie, for the condigne thankes due vnto ye therefore, the heauens graunt mee so much grace, that some occasion may present it selfe vnto me, wherein I may haue meane to testifie that in effect, which I cannot in wordes sufficiently protest vnto yee. Longer would the faine haue discoursed with prince Edward, (for loue discouered alreadie both to the one and the other I knowe not what fatall liking) if the Empresse had not gone her selfe to see her sonne disarmed, by meanes whereof she giuing him a gracious farewel (such at the least did he interpret it) tooke her conge of her secret louer. Who seeing her depart so of a sodaine from him without anie leasure to answere her, was so perplexed as he knew not wel what to do nor to saie, vntill that his page Claudius and Bellager comming towards him brought his horse, as it were awaked out of a sound sleepe, he mounted incontinently on horseback, taking backe the same way to the place where he left Olymba and Mesderin, as he trauelled thether, Bellager, who was no lesse astonished of the bloudie battell which he sawe him fight, than of his great valor and prowesse, as they were on their waie bespake him in this manner. Sir knight, of a trouth you haue shewed at the request of the princes a great token of your honest and milde disposition towards Primaleon. Companion (quoth the prince) I know not what I should answere thee, but that he is one of the most valyant and skilfull knights whom I euer saw in my life: neuertheles much more dyd the delicate hand and the eloquent tongue of the infant his sister driue me, than did his heauie & sound blows, or all the skill of his fight, whereby hee can so aduantagiously helpe himselfe. Bellager hearing the Englishman speake with so great affection, began to smile a little, when hee prosecuted his point, saying: Surely I beleeue the cruell wound which Osmaginni prophesied you should receiue there, is in deede no other thing but the extreame beautie of the princes, which I should be neuer

haue

haue imagined to haue bin so accomplished, had I not sene her before with mine eyes. And prince Edward saying moreouer, that God and nature had made her so matchles a Paragon onely to plague him, prayed him to wrap up his wounds a litle, (for he lost much blood, and had indured a cruel pole volemie, which he and Claudius dyd as well as they could, vntill they came to their lodging, where they arriued verie late, for whome Olympa and Meliderin were in great paine, knowing not well what was become of them, or what successe they had. Whom afterwardes they saw. Prince Edward, they entertained him with vnspeakable ioy, asking him many times how he dyd: Ah? adame, quoth he, better had it beene for me neuer to haue stirred from home this daie, for so much as Phaustesne a thing which hath cruelly wounded me, may rather hath brought me into more than a mortall mary, dame. Take no care for that, replyed the infant Olympa, because she who hath wounded you, shall himselfe applie the fit and fauourable plaister to your griefe. With that she disarmed him with her owne handes, then spreading sundrie sugulter ingruentes which Olimaguin left her, vpon his woundes, she caused him to lie him downe in the litle bedde within the Forest, where he slept soundly, not without great need: and in the meane time Bellinger recounted the successe of the battell vnto his brethren, reporting how stoutly, and doubtlesse deserued it. In fine, admiring all themselues what they were best to do, considering the vnkindnes which Olimaguin had left them, they sayled with so good a gale all that night, that about the point of day they found themselues in Morana, a citie scituate within the confynes of the Countie of Nice, where dwelled at the same time a brother of the late Olimaguin, a verie gallant knight, and the principall man in that place, whereof the princesse Olympa being verie glad, he visited as soone as he was vp to visit prince Federich, demanding of him how he dyd. Verie well madame, quoth he, all things considered, but verie ill of one which I beare in mine heart. Doe not be so hart remedy found, for that as for the other, replyed she smiling, and I tell you that your desires shall haue a most happie end: for to obtaine the which, when time shall serue, I will shew you the waie which

ye may ſe cauſe, ſo that now at this preſent ye ſtande in nede of nothing but of refreſhing, and to make you ſtrong, to the end ye may ſpedily ſomme bacfoy we are ſhrewde in one of the portes of the ſoudans owne ſubiect, where ſtandeth Ormagwin, of whome we repoſe great confidence, as in one of the principall ſeruants of the ſoudan and of our beſt friendes. Sir knight, replied the knight, it ſhal be youre to commaund me, and mine to obey you vntill death. I yelde ye a thouſand thankes, quoth the damſell, albeit for my ſake I ſhall not haue to liue vntil I commaunde to warde you, ſeeing it is I whome it is moſte conuenient to do you the beſt ſeruice I can. Notwithſtanding, ſeeing aboue the circumſtances for this preſent, it ſhalbe beſte you to vnderſtande, how we thoſe daye, ſubſiſted ye reſpondere à fiep, fully reſolued and made abſolute determination concerning that whiche was ſeme to paſſe this plaſe, according to the inſtructions lefte by Ormagwin left he at his death. And ſo [illegible] Bellager ſhould go alſore to the ſoudan, and [illegible] knight named to vnderſtande of him how we ſhoulde our ſelues to proceede in this buſines. This aduiſe was liked beſt of all by prince Edward, therefore Bellager entering into a ſhippe, apparelled like a ciuill marchant, hoiſe ſayle, went into the coaſte as farre as Marſilia, [illegible] ſhould not be eſpied of him eaſily. As ſoone as he was gotten into the houſe, after ſalutations, he gaue him to vnderſtande the cauſe of his comming, & ſecrete meſſage vnto him, which no man knewe but himſelfe. The wiſe Ormagwin ſpedily [illegible] Bellager ſhould ſay vnto him when he ſhould come to the appointment of both, when they came together, ſalutations paſſed, a valyant chriſtian knight did recount the whole matter vnto him, who vnderſtood the matter (ſeeing Bellager was a valiant a Gentleman) he was maruelous glad, and giuing vnto God hartie thankes for ſo good ſpede he had, [illegible] ſaide, Bleſſed be God, who is mindfull of vs in the time of our neede, & of our ſouereigne Ladies, but yet muſt diligently conſider with your ſelues, as thoſe who ſhall [illegible] before I may ſo ſet forth my Rebellion ye in your owne affaires, leſt when as the ſtorming ſhall come, ſee that you your ſelues, and all thoſe who ſhall

panie them, come secretly into this place, where I will keep you
vntill I impart your arriuall vnto many others who haue lyke
desire as I haue to doo you good, to the end we may aduise toge-
ther how to bring this our enterprise best about. Bellager hauing
receiued this aduertisement, went directly towards the compa-
nie, who attended his comming with great deuotion, so that as
soone as the houre of the night was come which Maruin and he
had agreed vpon, they all went aboard in a place where they
found one of his sonnes, who waited there for them of purpose
to guide them the waie: and presently the barke wherein they
came, vanished out of sight, and was neuer seene afterwardes.
They being all safe arriued at the house, and lodged in the most
commodious part thereof, where none of the seruants did fre-
quent, when Maruin saw his fittest time hee went to visite the
children of his true liege and soueraigne, vnto whom hee wept
for ioy in welcomming them thether. Then hauing giuen such
curteous entertainment to prince Edward as beseemed a man of
his calling, he vsed such care and diligence in all thinges to doo
him good, that within a short space he cured him of all his wounds.
But let vs suffer them to rest here a little, while Maruin worke
his complots with other his conductors, to make an end of the
first booke of Primaleon, whose generous and heroicall feates of
armes are continued in a second parte, no lesse profitable than
pleasant, and full of all sweete recreation to delight the rea-
ders, with infinitie of amorous and martiall dis-
courses, the like neuer read of in anie
historie before.

FINIS.

ye may keepe, so that now at this present ye stand in need of nothing but of refreshing, and to make you strong, to the end ye may speedily succour us, for we are already in one of the townes of the Soudan our vnkle, where dwelleth Osmaguins brother, in whome we repose great confidence, as in one of the principall seruants of the Soudan and of our best friends. Madame, replied the Knight, it shal be yours to command me, and mine to obey ye vntill death. I yeeld ye a thousand thankes, quoth the damsell, albeit for my ryes I should not dare to vse anie commaundement towards you, seeing it is I whome it neerely concerneth to do yee the best seruice I can. Notwithstanding, letting alone the circumstances for this present, it shall please you to vnderstande, how we three haue, whilest ye three were a sleep, fully resolued and made absolute determination concerning that which wee are come to do in this place, according to the instructions which Osmaguin left vs at his death. And we haue thought it best, that Bellager should go attired like a marchant vnto Marsin (so is the knight named) to vnderstand of him how wee must behaue our selues to proceede in this business. This aduise was liked best of all by prince Edward, therefore Bellager entering into a shippe, apparelled like a ciuill marchant, with a gowne of credit, went into the towne as farre as Marsins house, vnto which euery one he met directed him easily. As soone as he was gotten vnto his house, after salutations, he gaue him to vnderstand how he was deliuer a secrete message vnto him, which no man might heare but himselfe. So withdrawing themselues alone into a chamber, Bellager reuealed vnto him who he was, and how by the appointment of his brother they came thether, accompanied with a valyant christian knight, to recouer their estate. When Marsin vnderstood the matter (seeing Bellager so goodly and gallant a Gentleman) he was marueilous glad, and lifting vp both his handes to heauens for ioy, thus he spake. Blessed be the almightie God, who is mindfull of ye in the end, my deare friendes and soueraigne Lordes, bee yee most heartily welcome vnto your house, as those who shall want nothing which I may do for ye, to reestablish ye in your owne estate, euen soone as the euening shall come, see that you your sister, and all the other who accompanie

panie them, come secretly into this place, where I will keep you vntill I impart your arrivall vnto many others who haue lyke desire as I haue to doo you good, to the end we may aduise together how to bring this our enterprise best about. Bellager hauing receiued this aduertisement, went directly towards the companie, who attended his comming with great deuotion, so that as soone as the houre of the night was come which Maruin and he had agreed vpon, they all went ashoare in a place where they found one of his sonnes, who waited there for them of purpose to guide them the waie: and presently the barke wherein they came, vanished out of sight, and was neuer seene afterwardes. They being all safe arriued at the house, and lodged in the most commodious part thereof, where none of the seruants did frequent, when Maruin saw he his fittest time hee went to visite the children of his true liege and soueraigne, vnto whom hee wept for ioy in welcomming them thether. Then hauing giuen such curteous entertainment to prince Edward as beseemed a man of his calling, he vsed such care and diligence in all thinges to doo him good, ỹ within a short space he cured him of all his wounds. But let vs suffer them to rest here a little, while Maruin worke his complots with other his conductors, to make an end of the first booke of Primaleon, whose generous and heroicall feates of armes are continued in a second parte, no lesse profitable than pleasant, and full of all sweete recreation to delight the readers, with infinitie of amors and martiall discourses, the like neuer read of in anie history before.

FINIS.